

# Representations of Numbers in Linear Recurrent Systems 

## Reprezentace čísel v lineárních rekurentních systémech

Master's Thesis

| Author: | Bc. Hynek Peřina |
| :--- | :--- |
| Supervisor: | Ing. Petr Ambrož, PhD. |
| Academic year: | $2020 / 2021$ |

## ZADÁNÍ DIPLOMOVÉ PRÁCE

| Student: | Bc. Hynek Peřina |
| :--- | :--- |
| Studijní program: | Aplikace přírodních věd |
| Studijní obor: | Matematická informatika |
| Název práce (česky): | Reprezentace čísel v lineárních rekurentních systémech |
| Název práce (anglicky): | Representation of numbers in linear recurrent systems |

Pokyny pro vypracování:

1) Proved’te rešerši známých výsledků týkajících se vlastností funkce $R(n)$, která udává počet rozvojů čísla n ve Fibonacciho číselné soustavě.
2) Zobecněte metodu pro výpočet hodnoty $R(n)$ pro jiné lineární rekurentní systémy (s bází zadanou rekurencí 2. řádu) než je Fibonacciho num. systém.
3) Pro zkoumané lin. rekurentní systémy nalezněte a implementujte vhodné algoritmy pro napočítání funkce $R(n)$ pro dostatečně velký interval hodnot čísla $n$.
4) Na základě napočítaných hodnot funkce $R(n)$ zkoumejte její vlastnosti: symetrie, minima a maxima na podintervalech, posloupnosti argmin $R(n) a \operatorname{argmax} R(n)$, atd.

Doporučená literatura:

1) J. Berstel, An excercise on Fibonacci representations, RAIRO Theor. Inform. Appl. 35, 2002, 491-498.
2) P. Kocábová, Z. Masáková, E. Pelantová, Integers with maximal number of Fibonacci representations, RAIRO Theor. Inf. Appl. 39, 2005, 343-358.
3) P. Kocábová, Z. Masáková, E. Pelantová, Ambiguity in the m-Bonacci numeration system, Discrete Math. Theor. Comput. Sci. 9, 2007, 109-124.

Jméno a pracoviště vedoucího diplomové práce:
Ing. Petr Ambrož, Ph.D.
KM FJFI, Trojanova 13, 12000 Praha 2

Jméno a pracoviště konzultanta:

Datum zadání diplomové práce: $\quad 31.10 .2020$
Datum odevzdání diplomové práce: 3.5.2021
Doba platnosti zadání je dva roky od data zadání.

## Acknowledgment:

I would like to thank Petr Ambrož for his expert guidance and support during the writing of my Master's Thesis.

## Author's declaration:

I declare that this Master's Thesis is entirely my own work and I have listed all the used sources in the bibliography.

## Název práce:

## Reprezentace čísel v lineárních rekurentních systémech

Autor: Hynek Peřina

Obor: Matematická informatika
Druh práce: Diplomová práce
Vedoucí práce: Ing. Petr Ambrož, PhD., katedra matematiky, FJFI ČVUT v Praze
Abstrakt: Necht́ $t_{1}, \ldots, t_{m} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, t_{m} \neq 0$ jsou koeficienty lineárně rekurentní posloupnosti $B_{k}=$ $\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i} B_{k-i}$ s počátečními podmínkami $B_{0}=1, B_{1}=t_{1}+1, \ldots, B_{m-1}=\sum_{j=1}^{m-1} t_{j} B_{m-1-j}+1$. Každá taková posloupnost určuje numerační systém, kde každému $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ je přiřazeno slovo $w_{N-1} \cdots w_{0}$ z celočíselných cifer splňující rovnost $n=\sum_{i=0}^{N-1} w_{i} B_{i}$. Dané číslo $n$ může mít více takových reprezentací, označíme $R(n)$ počet reprezentací $n$ nad kanonickou abecedou. Zkoumáme vlastnosti $R(n)$ v konfluentních numeračních systémech a zobecňujeme výsledky P. Kocábové, Z. Masákové a E. Pelantové týkající se $R(n)$ v soustavách založených na Fibonacciho a $m$ bonacciho posloupnostech. Dokazujeme maticový vzorec pro $R(n)$ v konfluentních systémech a určujeme maxima funkce $R(n)$ ve všech konfluentních systémech. Dále ukazujeme, že v soustavách založených na posloupnostech, které mají všechny koeficienty rekurence stejné, se maximální hodnoty $R(n)$ shodují s těmi ve Fibonacciho a $m$-bonacciho soustavách.

Kličová slova: konfluentní numerační systémy, lineární numerační systémy, redundance

Title:

## Representations of Numbers in Linear Recurrent Systems

Author: Hynek Peřina

Abstract: Given coefficients $t_{1}, \ldots, t_{m} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, t_{m} \neq 0$, the linear recurrent sequence $B_{k}=$ $\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i} B_{k-i}$ with initial conditions $B_{0}=1, B_{1}=t_{1}+1, \ldots, B_{m-1}=\sum_{j=1}^{m-1} t_{j} B_{m-1-j}+1$ defines a numeration system. Every $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ can be represented by a word $w_{N-1} \cdots w_{0}$ consisting of integer digits that is defined by the equality $n=\sum_{i=0}^{N-1} w_{i} B_{i}$. A given $n$ can have several such representations. Let $R(n)$ be the function that counts the number of distinct representations of $n$ over the canonical alphabet. We study the properties of the function $R(n)$ in confluent numeration systems and extend the results of P. Kocábová, Z. Masáková, and E. Pelantová for $R(n)$ in the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems. We prove a matrix formula for $R(n)$ in confluent systems and determine the maxima of $R(n)$ in all confluent systems. Namely, we show that in systems based on sequences whose recurrence coefficients are all identical, the maximal values of $R(n)$ equal those in the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems.

Key words: confluent numeration systems, linear numeration systems, redundancy

## Contents

Contents ..... 9
Introduction ..... 11
1 Preliminaries ..... 13
2 Linear Numeration Systems ..... 15
2.1 Combinatorics of Linear Numeration Systems ..... 22
2.1.1 Abstract Rewriting and Confluent $B$-Systems ..... 22
2.1.2 Recognising Greedy Representations ..... 26
3 Ambiguity of Linear Numeration Systems ..... 33
3.1 Calculating $R(n)$ ..... 34
3.2 Computational Results ..... 40
3.2.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ ..... 43
3.2.2 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m>2$ ..... 47
3.2.3 Confluent Systems with $a>b$ ..... 52
4 Properties of $R(n)$ in Confluent $B$-systems ..... 59
4.1 Palindromic Structure of $R(n)$ ] ..... 59
4.2 Matrix Formula for $R(n)$ ..... 60
4.3 Maxima of $R(n)$ in General Confluent Systems ..... 67
4.3.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ ..... 68
4.3.2 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m>2$ ..... 75
4.3.3 Confluent Systems with $a>b$ ..... 78
4.4 Arguments of the Maxima of $R(n)$ in Confluent Systems ..... 81
4.4.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ ..... 81
4.4.2 Confluent Systems with $a>b$ ..... 83
Conclusion ..... 89
Appendix ..... 91
Bibliography ..... 95

## Introduction

Numbers are intrinsincally linked with the way we write them. In our daily life, the decimal system is the most practical, whereas computers store numbers using the binary system. A numeration system is a set of rules that we use to assign strings of digits to values and vice versa.

The most commonly used numeration system is the standard $b$-ary system. In this numeration system, we construct a representation of an integer $x$ by first finding the largest power of $b$ that is smaller than $x$, then dividing $x$ by this power of $b$ and storing the result as the most significant digit, then diving the remainder by the next smaller power of $b$, recording that as the next digit and repeatedly dividing the remainder by smaller and smaller powers of $b$ until we construct the whole representation. However, we do not necessarily have to use a geometric sequence. It is easy to prove that any strictly increasing sequence starting by 1 can be used to represent natural numbers. We will call numeration systems based on such sequences the $B$-systems. In literature [5], the name $U$-systems is also used.

Of particular interest are numeration systems based on a sequence satisfying a linear recurrence with integer coefficients. The most famous example is the Fibonacci representation, also called Zeckendorf representation [14] after its discoverer, which uses the Fibonacci sequence. For example, in the Zeckendorf representation, the number six has the representation 1001, since $6=5+1$ and 5 and 1 are the first and fourth Fibonacci numbers, respectively. Much has been done in the study of the Fibonacci system and $B$-systems in general and the language of normal representations. For example, Hollander [8] studied the conditions needed for a $B$-system's language of normal representations (obtained by the usual greedy algorithm) to be regular.
$B$-systems based on a linear recurrent sequence have the property that they are redundant, i.e. a given number may have multiple representations in such a system. The number six has another valid representation in the Fibonacci numeration system, namely 111, because $6=$ $3+2+1$. The focus of this work will be quantifying the degree of this ambiguity for a selected class of linear numeration systems, namely the confluent systems. Denote by $R(n)$ the number of representations of the number $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ in a given $B$-system. Kocábová, Masáková, and Pelantová studied the properties of the function $R(n)$ in the systems based on the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci sequences [12, 11]. By the $m$-bonacci sequence we mean the sequence whose every element is the sum of $m>2$ consecutive preceding elements. We will expand on their work and study the properties of $R(n)$ in their generalisation, the confluent systems. Established by Frougny in [3], they are linear numeration systems which generate a rewriting system that is confluent. We will specify this in more detail in Chapter 2.

In Chapter 1, we introduce some basic terminology from combinatorics on words, since that will be needed for working with representations of numbers (which are strings of digits, i.e. words).

In Chapter 2 we establish linear numeration systems and verify some of their properties. Namely, we will introduce the (F) systems and confluent systems and derive a way how to
recognise a greedy representation in an ( F ) system.
In Chapter 3 we present the algorithm for calculating $R(n)$ and the computational results of our survey of the function $R(n)$ in several confluent systems. Our data suggests that confluent systems are a close generalisation of the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems, since in two large subclasses of confluent systems the function $R(n)$ displays substantially similar behaviour to the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems. In this section we also conjecture expressions for the values of the maxima of $R(n)$ and the number of arguments of the maxima of $R(n)$.

In Chapter 4 we study the theoretical properties of the function $R(n)$ and derive a closed-form matrix formula for the calculation of $R(n)$ in confluent systems. We then use this matrix formula to verify our hypotheses from Chapter 3 and show that confluent systems with all recurrence coefficients equal behave identically to the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems as well as show the difference to the confluent systems where the last recurrence coefficient is strictly smaller.

Lastly, in the Appendix, we describe in detail our program for calculating $R(n)$.

## Chapter 1

## Preliminaries

The focus of this work will be representations of numbers. Numbers are represented by words, i.e. sequences of characters (digits) from a a finite set. Therefore, in this section we will establish some basic terminology related to combinatorics on words.

An alphabet is any finite set $A$. Its elements are known as letters or symbols. In our case $A$ will be typically a finite subset of integers. A word or string over $A$ is some sequence of letters from $A$. Formally, a word $w$ is defined as $w=w_{n} w_{n-1} \cdots w_{0}$, where $w_{i} \in A, n \in \mathbb{N}$. The length of a word $w=w_{n} w_{n-1} \cdots w_{0}$ is denoted $|w|=n+1$. The set of all finite words over $A$ is denoted by

$$
A^{*}=\{\varepsilon\} \cup \bigcup_{n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, w_{i} \in A} w_{n} w_{n-1} \cdots w_{0} .
$$

where $\varepsilon$ is the empty word, i.e. a sequence of length zero. The set $A^{*}$ is endowed with the binary operation concatenation of words $\circ: A^{*} \times A^{*} \rightarrow A^{*}$ which is defined followingly: For $u=u_{n} u_{n-1} \cdots u_{0}, v=v_{m} v_{m-1} \cdots v_{0} \in A^{*}$ set

$$
u \circ v=u_{n} u_{n-1} \cdots u_{0} v_{m} v_{m-1} \cdots v_{0} .
$$

The circle operator $\circ$ is however usually left out and we write $w=u v$. The structure ( $A^{*}, \circ$ ) is a free monoid, $\varepsilon$ being the neutral element. The concatenation of $w$ with itself is defined recursively as

$$
w^{0}=\varepsilon, \quad w^{n+1}=w^{n} w .
$$

We say that $u$ is a prefix of $w$ if $w$ can be factorised as $w=u v, v \in A^{*}$. Analogically, $u$ is a suffix of $w$ if $w$ can be factorised as $w=v u, v \in A^{*}$. Additionally, $u$ is said to be a proper prefix or proper suffix if $v$ from the above factorisations is non-empty. Lastly, $u$ is a factor of $w$ if there exists a factorisation of $w$ such that $w=x u v, x, v \in A^{*}$. Likewise, if $x$ or $v$ are not equal to $\varepsilon$ then $u$ is a proper factor. Note: In all cases the words $u, v, x$ can equal $\varepsilon$ ( $\varepsilon$ is the prefix, suffix and factor of every word).

A language is any subset of $A^{*}$. We say that a word $w \in A^{*}$ avoids a set $X \subset A^{*}$ if no word $x \in X$ is a factor of $w$. By extension we say that a language $L$ avoids $X$ if all $w \in L$ avoid $X$.

We define two canonical orderings on the set $A^{*}$.
Definition 1.1. Consider the two words $x=x_{N} x_{N-1} \cdots x_{0}, y=y_{M} y_{M-1} \cdots y_{0}$ over a totally ordered alphabet $A$. Then $x$ is said to be lexicographically greater than $y$ (denoted $x \succ_{\mathrm{lex}} y$ ), when one of the following conditions holds:

- $N>M$ (i.e. $x$ is longer than $y$ ) and $y$ is a prefix of $x$.
- There exists an index $r \leq N$ such that $x_{r}>y_{r}$ and $x_{i}=y_{i}$ for all $r<i \leq N$.

Definition 1.2. Again let $x=x_{N} x_{N-1} \cdots x_{0}, y=y_{M} y_{M-1} \cdots y_{0}$ be words over a totally ordered alphabet $A$. Then $x$ is said to be radix greater than $y$ (denoted $x \succ y$ ) when one of the following conditions holds:

- $N>M$, i.e. $x$ is longer than $y$.
- $N=M$ and there exists an index $r \leq N$ such that $x_{r}>y_{r}$ and $x_{i}=y_{i}$ for all $r<i \leq N$.

The lexicographic ordering is equivalent to the alphabetic ordering whilst the radix order is equivalent to ordering by value. Consider for example numbers written in the decimal representation. The string 42 is lexicographically greater than 107 , even though the value it represents is smaller, whereas by radix order $107 \succ 42$. The radix order can also be understood followingly: align $x$ and $y$ to the least significant digit (to the right), pad the shorter word with zeroes on the left until both words have the same length, and then compare them lexicographically. On the other hand, in the lexicographic order we align the two words to the most significant digit (to the left), pad the shorter word with zeroes on the right and then compare them by radix order. Lastly, it is evident that for two words of the same length the lexicographic and radix order are equivalent.

In later sections, we will use terminology from abstract rewriting systems, which we will define here. We will largely follow the notation and terms used in [3], as that will suffice for our needs. More on the theory of abstract rewriting systems may be found in [9] and [10].

A rewriting system $\rho$ over $A^{*}$ is a set of rewriting rules $s \rightarrow t$, where $s, t \in A^{*}$. The regular closure of $\rho$ is denoted $\underset{\rho}{\vec{\rho}}$ and defined followingly:

$$
x \underset{\rho}{\rightarrow} y \quad \text { if and only if } \quad x=f s g, y=f t g \text { and }(s \rightarrow t) \in \rho
$$

This relation can be called , $x$ is rewritten to $y$ using rule $(s \rightarrow t)$ ".
The reflexive and transitive closure of $\rightarrow$ is denoted $\stackrel{*}{\rho}$. In other words, $x \xrightarrow[\rho]{\stackrel{*}{\rho}} y$ if $y=x$ or there exists a sequence of rewritings $x \underset{\rho}{\rightarrow} t_{1} \underset{\rho}{\rightarrow} t_{2} \cdots \underset{\rho}{\vec{\rho}} y$.

The relation $\underset{\rho}{\rightarrow}$ is called confluent if for every three words $z, s, t$ such that $z \xrightarrow{*} s$ and $z \xrightarrow{*} t$ there exists a word $v$ satisfying $s \xrightarrow[\rho]{*} v$ and $t \underset{\rho}{\stackrel{*}{p}} v$. A rewriting system $\rho$ is confluent if the relation $\vec{\rho}$ is confluent.

If no word $t \neq s$ exists such that $s \underset{\rho}{*} t$ we say that $s$ is irreducible modulo $\rho$. If $v \xrightarrow{*} s$ where $s$ is irreducible, we say that $v$ reduces to $s$ or that $s$ is the result of reduction of $v$. Furthermore, if $\rho$ is confluent, then there exists a reduction function $\rho^{*}: A^{*} \rightarrow A^{*}$ which maps every word $w \in A^{*}$ to the irreducible word $\rho^{*}(w)$ (which is the result of reduction of $w$ ). Let us confirm that $\rho^{*}$ is truly a function. Let $w \in A^{*}$ be reducible modulo $\rho$. Then rewrite $w$ using rules from $\rho$ until an irreducible word $t$ is reached. Take $w$ and start rewriting it again and if possible, select in each step a different rewriting rule than that used in deriving $t$. Continue this process until an irreducible word $s$ is reached. Because $\rho$ is confluent, $s$ must equal $t$, otherwise we would have words $w, s, t$ such that $w \xrightarrow[\rho]{*} s$ and $w \xrightarrow[\rho]{*} t$, but no $v$ would exist such that $s \xrightarrow[\rho]{*} v$ and $t \xrightarrow[\rho]{*} v$, which is in contradiction with the confluence property of $\rho$. Thus the irreducible word $\rho^{*}(w)$ is uniquely defined for every $w$ and $\rho^{*}$ is indeed a function.

## Chapter 2

## Linear Numeration Systems

In this section we shall introduce linear numeration systems, the focus of our study. Informally, a numeration system is the set of rules that we use to assign a word (a representation) to a given value. More formally, a numeration system for the integers can be understood as a map from $\mathbb{N}_{0}$ to some subset of $A^{*}$, where $A$ is a finite alphabet. For example, the standard $b$-ary system for integers is a map $\mathcal{N}: \mathbb{N}_{0} \rightarrow\{0,1, \ldots, b-1\}^{*}$ such that $\mathcal{N}(x)=x_{N-1} \cdots x_{1} x_{0}$, where $b \in \mathbb{N}, b \geq 2, N$ is defined by $b^{N}>x \geq b^{N-1}$ and the digits are defined as $x_{k}=\left\lfloor\frac{x}{b^{k}}\right\rfloor-\sum_{i=0}^{k-1} x_{i} b^{i}$ for all $k \in\{0,1, \ldots, N-1\}$.

Along with the standard $b$-ary representation, multiple other numeration systems exist. In the standard $b$-ary system, a letter represents how many times a given power of $b$ is included in the number that it represents. For example, the string 203, understood as a decimal expansion, represents the value composed by adding $2 \cdot 10^{2}, 0 \cdot 10^{1}$, and $3 \cdot 10^{0}$. Thus, in the decimal system, we represent numbers using the geometric sequence $B_{n}=10^{n}, n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$.

However, this is not the only type of sequence that can be used. It is easy to show that $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ can be any strictly increasing sequence of positive integers. Numeration systems based on such a sequence are known as $B$-systems (also called $U$-systems in literature, see Frougny [6]). Such systems can be used to represent all natural numbers, and with a slight modification all integers. In this work we will focus solely on representing natural numbers.

It must be noted that not all sequences generate a numeration system whose language of normal representations (which we will define later) is well-behaved. However, a class of sequences that generate numeration systems with reasonable properties are the linearly recurrent sequences with natural coefficients. We will call any such sequence a basis.

Definition 2.1. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be a sequence of positive integers satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{n}=t_{1} B_{n-1}+t_{2} B_{n-2}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{n-m}, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, t_{m} \neq 0$. Set the $m$ initial conditions equal to

$$
\begin{align*}
B_{0} & =1 \\
B_{1} & =t_{1}+1 \\
B_{2} & =t_{1} B_{1}+t_{2}+1, \\
& \vdots  \tag{2.2}\\
B_{m-1} & =t_{1} B_{m-2}+t_{2} B_{m-3}+\cdots+t_{m-1}+1 .
\end{align*}
$$

Then $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is a basis and $m \geq 1$ is its basis order.

We can see that this is indeed a generalisation of the $b$-ary system, since for any natural $b \geq 2$ the sequence $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}=\left(b^{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ satisfies the recurrence $B_{n}=b \cdot B_{n-1}$ and so it is a basis of order 1.

A basis can be used to assign a value to a word over an alphabet of integers followingly.
Definition 2.2. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be a basis. Then a $B$-representation of the number $x \in \mathbb{Z}$ is any string $x_{N} x_{N-1} \cdots x_{0}$ over a subset of $\mathbb{Z}$ with $N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ such that $x=\sum_{i=0}^{N} x_{i} B_{i}$. The empty word $\varepsilon$ is understood as a $B$-representation of zero.

When it will be necessary to differentiate a $B$-representation from other representations (typically a decimal representation), we will label the $B$-representation with a subscript $B$, as in the following example.

Example 2.3. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be the Fibonacci sequence, i.e. $B_{n}=B_{n-1}+B_{n-2}, B_{0}=1$, $B_{1}=2$. Then $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}=\{1,2,3,5,8, \ldots\}$ and $1001_{B}$ is a $B$-representation of the number six, since $1 \cdot 5+0 \cdot 3+0 \cdot 2+1 \cdot 1=6$. Another possible $B$-representation of six is $111_{B}$, since $1 \cdot 3+1 \cdot 2+1 \cdot 1=6$.

Remark 2.4. Even though in Definition 2.2 we allowed digits to be from $\mathbb{Z}$, we will focus solely on representations of non-negative integers, where non-negative digits will suffice. Therefore, from now on a $B$-representation is understood to be a word consisting of non-negative digits only (unless specified otherwise).

Remark 2.5. Consider a basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$. For brevity, we will often use the expression $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}\right)$-B-system or just $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}\right)$-system when speaking about the numeration system generated by this basis. For example, the Fibonacci numeration system from Example 2.3 would be known as the $(1,1)$-system.

Using Definition 2.2 a numeric value can be assigned to any string of integer digits, but typically we want to do the opposite - that is to generate a string representing a given value. To prove that this is possible for any non-negative integer $x$, we will use the greedy algorithm. However, first, we need to prove a technical lemma.

Lemma 2.6. Every polynomial of the form

$$
f(x)=x^{m}-t_{1} x^{m-1}-t_{2} x^{m-2}-\cdots-t_{m-1} x-t_{m}
$$

where $m \geq 1, t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, t_{m} \neq 0$, has exactly one real positive root $\beta$. Furthermore, all other roots of $f(x)$ lie in the circle $|x| \leq \beta$ and if $\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i}>1$, then $\beta>1$.

This lemma is required to show that the alphabet of digits will be finite. In its proof we will utilise the following theorem (from Marden [13] (Theorem 27.2), originally by Cauchy).

Theorem 2.7. Given a polynomial $p(x)=a_{n} x^{n}+a_{n-1} x^{n-1}+\cdots+a_{1} x+a_{0}$, where $a_{n} \neq 0$, define the polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q(x)=\left|a_{n}\right| x^{n}-\left|a_{n-1}\right| x^{n-1}-\cdots-\left|a_{1}\right| x-\left|a_{0}\right| . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Descartes' rule of signs, $Q(x)$ has precisely one positive real root $R$. Then all zeroes of $p(x)$ lie in the circle $|x| \leq R$.

Proof of Lemma 2.6. Suppose that $f(x)$ has no real root larger than 1. Clearly $f(x)$ is the characteristic polynomial of the basis $B_{n}=t_{1} B_{n-1}+t_{2} B_{n-2}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{n-m}$. Set the $m$ initial conditions equal to

$$
B_{0}=1, B_{1}=t_{1}+1, B_{2}=t_{1} B_{1}+t_{2}+1, \ldots, B_{m-1}=t_{1} B_{m-2}+\cdots+t_{m-1}+1
$$

Since $\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i}>1$, this yields a basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ that is strictly increasing. Therefore, if we solve the recurrence for $B_{n}$, at least one root of $f(x)$ must have absolute value larger than 1 . Take the root maximum in modulus and label it $\beta_{\max }$. By assumption, $\beta_{\max }$ cannot be real and positive.

From Descartes' rule of signs we can see that $f(x)$ has exactly one positive real root. Label this root $\beta_{\text {pos }}$. Evidently by assumption $\beta_{\text {pos }} \leq 1$. Additionally, we can see that $f(x)$ is in the same form as the right-hand side of 2.3 , i.e. $Q(x)=f(x)$. Therefore, by Theorem 2.7 all roots of $f(x)$ lie in the circle $|x| \leq R=\beta_{\text {pos }} \leq 1$. However, at least one root outside this circle exists $\left(\beta_{\max }\right)$, leading to a contradiction.

Now we can prove that every number can be represented using a given basis.
Theorem 2.8 ( $B$-Representation.). Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be a basis with coefficients satisfying $\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i}>$ 1 and $t_{m} \neq 0$. Then for every $x \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ there exists an $N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and coefficients $a_{i} \in A=$ $\{0,1,2, \ldots, a\}, i=0,1,2, \ldots, N$ such that

$$
x=a_{N} B_{N}+a_{N-1} B_{N-1}+\cdots+a_{1} B_{1}+a_{0} B_{0}
$$

where $a \in \mathbb{N}$ is a constant satisfying $\left\lfloor\sup _{N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}} \frac{B_{N+1}}{B_{N}}\right\rfloor \geq a$. In other words, every $x \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ has a $B$-representation $a_{N} a_{N-1} \cdots a_{1} a_{0}$ over the canonical alphabet $A$.
Proof. We will prove the existence of the $B$-representation of $x$ by constructing it. Given an $x \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and a basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ we proceed by the following greedy algorithm. Set

$$
N:=\max \left\{n \mid x \geq B_{n}\right\}
$$

and let initially $R:=x, i:=N$. Then in the $i$-th iteration of the algorithm do the following:

1. Set $a_{i}:=\left\lfloor R / B_{i}\right\rfloor$.
2. Set $R$ equal to the remainder of the division by $B_{i}$, i.e. $R:=R-a_{i} B_{i}$
3. If $i=0$, terminate, otherwise lower $i$ by one and repeat from step 1 ).

The representation is generated from the most significant digit. It is evident that this algorithm always terminates, since the number of iterations is finite. Also, the resulting word $a_{N} a_{N-1} \cdots a_{1} a_{0}$ is clearly a $B$-representation of $x$. What remains is to verify that all digits belong to the set $A=\{0,1,2, \ldots, a\}$.

Evidently, for every non-zero $x$ an $N$ exists such that $B_{N+1}>x \geq B_{N}$. Dividing by $B_{N}$ yields the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{N+1} / B_{N}>x / B_{N} \geq 1 \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $B_{n}$ is linearly recurrent and real, we can write it as a linear combination of $m$ real base sequences $\zeta_{1}^{n}, \ldots \zeta_{m}^{n}$, which we will construct from the $m$ roots $\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \ldots, \beta_{m} \in \mathbb{C}$ of the characteristic polynomial of the basis $B_{n}$.

The characteristic polynomial of the basis $B_{n}$ is of the form

$$
f(x)=x^{m}-t_{1} x^{m-1}-t_{2} x^{m-2}-\ldots-t_{m-1} x-t_{m}
$$

The polynomial $f(x)$ has real coefficients, therefore for every complex root $\beta_{i}$ of $f(x)$ its conjugate $\overline{\beta_{i}}$ will also be a root of $f(x)$. Suppose, without loss of generality, that the roots are ordered by modulus and multiplicity, that is $\left|\beta_{1}\right| \geq\left|\beta_{2}\right| \geq \cdots \geq\left|\beta_{m}\right|$ and repeated roots are ordered adjacently. That is for every root $\beta_{r}$ with multiplicity $\nu_{r}$ there exists exactly one $1 \leq k \leq m$ such that $\beta_{k}=\beta_{k+1}=\cdots=\beta_{r}=\cdots=\beta_{k+\nu_{r}-1}$.

Let us now construct the sequences $\zeta_{k}^{n}$. For every root $\beta_{k} \in \mathbb{R}$ with multiplicity $\nu_{k}$, where $k$ is such that $\beta_{k}=\beta_{k+1}=\cdots=\beta_{r}=\cdots=\beta_{k+\nu_{r}-1}$, set for all $0 \leq j \leq \nu_{k}-1$

$$
\zeta_{k+j}^{n}=n^{j} \beta_{k}^{n} .
$$

By Lemma 2.6, $f(x)$ will have exactly one positive real root larger than 1 and all other roots will be smaller in modulus, denote this root $\beta=\beta_{1}$.

For every $\beta_{k} \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \mathbb{R}$ with multiplicity $\nu_{k}$ denote its complex conjugate $\beta_{l}=\overline{\beta_{k}}, \nu_{l}=\nu_{k}$, where the index $1 \leq l \leq m$ is again minimal. For unambiguity let $k<l$. Then for all $0 \leq j \leq \nu_{k}-1$ set

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \zeta_{k+j}^{n}:=n^{j} \frac{\beta_{k}{ }^{n}+\beta_{l}^{n}}{2}=n^{j}\left|\beta_{k}\right|^{n} \cos \left(n \frac{\operatorname{Re}\left(\beta_{k}\right)}{\left|\beta_{k}\right|}\right), \\
& \zeta_{l+j}^{n}:=n^{j} \frac{\beta_{k}{ }^{n}-\beta_{l}^{n}}{2}=n^{j}\left|\beta_{k}\right|^{n} \sin \left(n \frac{\operatorname{Im}\left(\beta_{k}\right)}{\left|\beta_{k}\right|}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In this way the $m$ basic real sequences $\zeta_{1}^{n}, \ldots, \zeta_{m}^{n}$ are constructed. Substituting initial conditions for $B_{n}$ yields coefficients $\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{m} \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{n}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} \zeta_{i}^{n} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (2.5) into (2.4) and the fact that $\zeta_{1}^{N+1}=\beta_{1}^{N+1}=\beta^{N+1}$ yields for all $N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$

$$
1<\frac{B_{N+1}}{B_{N}}=\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} \zeta_{i}^{N+1}}{\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} \zeta_{i}^{N}}=\frac{\alpha_{1} \beta^{N+1}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} \alpha_{i} \zeta_{i}^{N+1}}{\alpha_{1} \beta^{N}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} \alpha_{i} \zeta_{i}^{N}}=\beta \frac{\alpha_{1}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} \alpha_{i} \frac{\zeta_{i}^{N+1}}{\beta^{N+1}}}{\alpha_{1}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} \alpha_{i} \frac{\zeta_{i}^{N}}{\beta^{N}}} .
$$

By Lemma 2.6, it is evident that

$$
\lim _{N \rightarrow+\infty} \frac{B_{N+1}}{B_{N}}=\beta>1 .
$$

The ratio of consecutive elements of $B_{n}$ is therefore for all $N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ bounded by some constant $K=\sup _{N \in \mathbb{N}} \frac{B_{N+1}}{B_{N}}, K \in \mathbb{Q}$. Together with (2.4) this results in

$$
K \geq B_{N+1} / B_{N}>x / B_{N} \geq 1
$$

The digit $a_{N}=\left\lfloor x / B_{N}\right\rfloor$ can therefore have only a finite number of values. Consider now other digits $a_{i}, 0 \leq i<N$. As the remainder of the division by $B_{i+1}$ will always be smaller than $B_{i+1}$ (step 2. of the greedy algorithm), in the $i$-th iteration the following will hold:

$$
B_{i+1}>R,
$$

dividing by $B_{i}$ this leads to

$$
K \geq \frac{B_{i+1}}{B_{i}}>\frac{R}{B_{i}} \geq 0
$$

After rounding we can see that $a_{i}=\left\lfloor R / B_{i}\right\rfloor$ can also have only a finite number of values. The digit $a_{i}$ is non-negative because $R$ is non-negative and $B_{i}$ is positive.

Clearly, a maximum digit $a \in \mathbb{N}$ exists such that $a_{i} \leq a$ for all $i=0,1, \ldots, N$ and

$$
a \leq\left\lfloor\sup _{N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}} \frac{B_{N+1}}{B_{N}}\right\rfloor=\lfloor K\rfloor,
$$

The canonical alphabet $A=\{0,1, \ldots, a\}$ for the basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is therefore well-defined.
In general the value of $a$ can be known only by calculating the elements of the basis. However, if the basis coefficients satisfy the inequality $t_{1} \geq t_{2} \geq \cdots \geq t_{m} \geq 1$, it is possible to deduce $a$ immediately from the coefficients of the recurrence, which we will prove shortly. This type of basis will also have certain other practical properties, so we will give it a name.
Definition 2.9. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be a basis of order $m$ whose coefficients satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{1} \geq t_{2} \geq \cdots \geq t_{m} \geq 1 \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we say that the basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ has the $(F)$ property or that $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is an (F) basis. By extension a $B$-system is said to have the ( F ) property if its basis has the ( F ) property.

The above definition is carried over from numeration systems with a non-integer base, the so called $\beta$-systems, which are studied for example in [5, 6]. The F stands for finite, as a real base $\beta>1$ is said to have the ( F ) property if every member of $\mathbb{Z}\left[\beta^{-1}\right] \cap \mathbb{R}^{+}$has a finite $\beta$-expansion. Take the polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x)=x^{m}-t_{1} x^{m-1}-\cdots-t_{m-1} x-t_{m} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

whose coefficients satisfy (2.6) and denote $\beta>1$ its root greatest in modulus. In [4] Frougny and Solomyak prove that $\beta$ is a Pisot number and that it has the (F) property. A Pisot number is an algebraic integer whose conjugates are all less than one in modulus. Notice that the polynomial $\chi(x)$ is the characteristic polynomial of a basis satisfying Definition 2.9, which is why we use this name.

Moreover, $\beta$-systems are closely tied to $B$-systems. Every $B$-system can be uniquely associated with a $\beta$-system whose language of greedy representations shares many combinatoric properties with the language of greedy $B$-representations. More on this association can be found in [5, 6].

We proceed with determining the canonical alphabet of $B$-systems with the ( F ) property.
Lemma 2.10. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be an $(F)$ basis. Then the canonical alphabet of the numeration system generated by $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is equal to $A=\left\{0,1, \ldots, t_{1}\right\}$.
Proof. Take $x \in \mathbb{N}$ and an (F) basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$. Suppose that we are generating the $B$-representation of $x$ using the algorithm from Theorem 2.8. Let $N \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ such that $B_{N+1}>x \geq B_{N}$. Substituting for $B_{N+1}$ from the recurrence (2.1) and dividing by $B_{N}$ yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& t_{1} B_{N}+t_{2} B_{N-1}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{N-m+1}>x \geq B_{N} \\
& t_{1}+\frac{t_{2} B_{N-1}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{N-m+1}}{B_{N}}>x / B_{N} \geq 1 . \tag{2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Let us now focus on the fraction on the left hand side of 2.8). Substituting for $B_{N}$ in the denominator yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{t_{2} B_{N-1}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{N-m+1}}{t_{1} B_{N-1}+\cdots+t_{m-1} B_{N-m+1}+t_{m} B_{N-m}}<1 . \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The inequality holds thanks to the (F) property $t_{1} \geq t_{2} \geq \cdots \geq t_{m} \geq 1$, which implies that the denominator is strictly larger than the numerator. Let us now return to the inequality 2.8 . Due to inequality (2.9), by rounding we get

$$
t_{1} \geq\left\lfloor x / B_{N}\right\rfloor \geq 1
$$

Consider now the other digits. Because the remainder after division by $B_{i+1}$ will always be smaller than $B_{i+1}$, in the $i$-th iteration of the algorithm we will have

$$
B_{i+1}>R .
$$

Following the same steps as above we arrive at

$$
t_{1}+\frac{t_{2} B_{i-1}+\cdots+t_{m} B_{i-m+1}}{B_{i}}>R / B_{i}
$$

and thus the digit $a_{i}=\left\lfloor R / B_{i}\right\rfloor$ is bounded by

$$
t_{1} \geq\left\lfloor R / B_{i}\right\rfloor \geq 0
$$

All digits $a_{N}, a_{N-1}, \ldots, a_{1}, a_{0}$ are contained in the finite alphabet $A=\left\{0,1, \ldots, t_{1}\right\}$.
For further study of $B$-representations, we define the value of a word.
Definition 2.11. Given a basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ and some alphabet $C \subset \mathbb{Z}$, the evaluator function $\pi: C^{*} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$ is defined for every word $w=w_{N} w_{N-1} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \in C^{*}$ as

$$
\pi(w)=\sum_{i=0}^{N} w_{i} B_{i}
$$

for the empty word we set $\pi(\varepsilon)=0$. More often we will say that $\pi(w)$ is the value of word $w$ (in the numeration system with basis $\left.\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}\right)$.

As is evident from Definition 2.2, several words can represent the same value. In other words, in general the map $\pi$ is not injective. The only case when it is injective is when a $B$-system coincides with the standard $b$-ary system, that is, the basis is of the form $B_{n}=b B_{n-1}$ for some $b \in \mathbb{N}, b \geq 2$.

Example 2.12. Consider the basis $B_{n}=3 B_{n-1}+B_{n-2}$. Then $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}=\{1,4,13,43,142, \ldots\}$, the canonical alphabet is equal to $A=\{0,1,2,3\}$ and the number $x=286_{\text {DEC }}$ has three different $B$-representations (over $A$ ).

$$
\begin{align*}
286_{\mathrm{DEC}} & =20002_{B}  \tag{2.10}\\
& =13102_{B} \\
& =13033_{B} .
\end{align*}
$$

Only the first representation (2.10) could have been constructed by the algorithm in Theorem 2.8, since it has the largest possible most significant digit. Accordingly, the representation 2.10 is largest by the radix order. This representation will be known as the greedy representation.

Definition 2.13. Let $x \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Then the $B$-representation constructed by the algorithm from Theorem 2.8 is called the greedy representation, or equivalently, the normal representation. It will be denoted $\langle x\rangle_{B}$. The set of all greedy $B$-representations will be known as the language of greedy representations, denoted $L(B)$.

Theorem 2.14 (Properties of Greedy Representations.). Let $x_{N} x_{N-1} \cdots x_{1} x_{0}=\langle x\rangle_{B}$ be the greedy $B$-representation of some $x \in \mathbb{N}$. Then the following holds:

1. $x_{N} \neq 0$.
2. $\langle x\rangle_{B}$ is the greatest by radix order among all B-representations of $x$.
3. $\langle x\rangle_{B} \succ\langle y\rangle_{B} \Leftrightarrow x>y$ for every two $x, y \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$.

Proof. Property 1. Evident from the proof of Theorem 2.8 .
Property 2. The greedy representation is the longest among all $B$-representations of $x$, since the most significant digit $x_{N}$ is obtained by dividing $x$ by the greatest element of the basis $B$ that is smaller than $x$. Additionally, this digit will be the greatest possible:

$$
x_{N}=\max \left\{k \mid k B_{N}<x\right\} .
$$

Suppose now a different representation of $x$, denote it $\tilde{x}=\tilde{x}_{\tilde{N}} \tilde{x}_{\tilde{N}-1} \cdots \tilde{x}_{1} \tilde{x}_{0}$. Evidently no $\tilde{x}$ can have $\tilde{x}_{N}>x_{N}$, so one of the following must occur:
a) $\left|\langle x\rangle_{B}\right|>|\tilde{x}|$
b) $\left|\langle x\rangle_{B}\right|=|\tilde{x}|$ and $\tilde{x}_{N}<x_{N}$.
c) $\left|\langle x\rangle_{B}\right|=|\tilde{x}|$ and $\tilde{x}_{N}=x_{N}$.

In cases a), b) we immediately obtain $\langle x\rangle_{B} \succ \tilde{x}$. In case c) the words $\langle x\rangle_{B}$ and $\tilde{x}$ share a common prefix beginning with (but not limited to) the digit $x_{N}$. Removing this prefix yields two words $\langle x\rangle_{B}^{*}, \tilde{x}^{*}$ of length $M+1<N+1$ that start with digits $x_{M} \neq \tilde{x}_{M}$. Because the greedy algorithm always selects the greatest digit, the inequality $x_{M}>\tilde{x}_{M}$ must hold and so case b) applies.

Property 3. $(\Rightarrow)$ :
Let $x_{N} x_{N-1} \cdots x_{0}=\langle x\rangle_{B} \succ\langle y\rangle_{B}=y_{M} y_{M-1} \cdots y_{0}$. Then from the definition of the radix ordering one of the following holds:
a) $\left|\langle x\rangle_{B}\right|>\left|\langle y\rangle_{B}\right|$, i.e. $N>M$.
b) $N=M$ and an $r \leq N$ exists such that $x_{r}>y_{r}$ and $x_{i}=y_{i}$ for all $N \geq i>r$.

In case a) the inequality $x>y$ is evident from the fact that $B_{N+1}>x \geq B_{N}, B_{M+1}>y \geq B_{M}$ and $N>M$ implies $N \geq M+1$. In total $x \geq B_{N}>y$.

Case b) warrants a more thorough analysis. Clearly

$$
x-y=\sum_{i=0}^{N} x_{i} B_{i}-\sum_{i=0}^{N} y_{i} B_{i}=\sum_{i=0}^{r} x_{i} B_{i}-\sum_{i=0}^{r} y_{i} B_{i} .
$$

Because $x_{r}-y_{r} \geq 1$, this can be bounded from below by

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{r} x_{i} B_{i}-\sum_{i=0}^{r} y_{i} B_{i} \geq B_{r}+\sum_{i=0}^{r-1}\left(x_{i}-y_{i}\right) B_{i} \geq B_{r}-\sum_{i=0}^{r-1} y_{i} B_{i}
$$

The word $y_{r-1} y_{r-2} \ldots y_{0}$ is a greedy representation of some value $\tilde{y}<y$ (due to the already proven case a) and also due to the fact that any suffix of a greedy representation is a greedy representation). Since its length is precisely $r$, the value $\tilde{y}$ must satisfy $B_{r}>\tilde{y} \geq B_{r-1}$. Therefore

$$
B_{r}-\sum_{i=0}^{r-1} y_{i} B_{i}>0
$$

from which $x>y$ follows.

$$
(\Leftarrow):
$$

The reverse implication is a corollary of the greedy algorithm. Let $x>y$. If an $N$ exists such that $x \geq B_{N}>y$, the greedy representation $\langle x\rangle_{B}$ will be longer than $\langle y\rangle_{B}$ and so $\langle x\rangle_{B} \succ\langle y\rangle_{B}$. If $B_{N+1}>x>y \geq B_{N}$, then an $0 \leq r \leq N$ exists such that in the $r$-th step of the greedy algorithm run simultaneously for $x$ and $y$ we will have remainders $R^{(x)}$ a $R^{(y)}$ which will satisfy

$$
\left\lfloor R^{(x)} / B_{N-r-1}\right\rfloor>\left\lfloor R^{(y)} / B_{N-r-1}\right\rfloor .
$$

For the $(N-r)$-th digits this will result in $x_{N-r}>y_{N-r}$ and $x_{i}=y_{i}$ for all $N-r<i \leq N$, therefore $\langle x\rangle_{B} \succ\langle y\rangle_{B}$, by the definition of the radix order.

### 2.1 Combinatorics of Linear Numeration Systems

In this section we will explore some further combinatorial properties of $B$-systems, most importantly factors of value zero and rewriting rules generated by $B$-systems. This will be followed by establishing the confluent $B$-systems. Finally, we will show a way how to recognise greedy representations in (F) systems. More on other properties of $B$-systems (for example, the regularity of $L(B)$ ) can be found in [5, 6, [8].

### 2.1.1 Abstract Rewriting and Confluent $B$-Systems

In this section we will introduce the confluent numeration systems, first established and studied by Frougny [3]. The first step is to realise that all linear numeration systems implicitly generate a rewriting system that is given by the basis recurrence.
Definition 2.15. Consider some alphabet $C=\{0,1, \ldots, c\}$. Then the rewriting system generated by the rule $0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m} \rightarrow 10^{m}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho_{C}= & \left\{x_{m} x_{m-1} \cdots x_{0} \rightarrow\left(x_{m}+1\right)\left(x_{m-1}-t_{1}\right) \cdots\left(x_{0}-t_{m}\right) \mid\right. \\
& \left.0 \leq x_{m}<c \text { and } x_{m-i} \geq t_{i} \text { for all } i \geq 1\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Every $B$-system with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$ thus defines a rewriting system generated by the rule $0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m} \rightarrow 10^{m}$ on its canonical alphabet $A$, which we denote $\rho_{A}$. We will call $\rho_{A}$ the rewriting system associated with the $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}\right)$-system. Because of the basis recurrence, this rewriting system has the practical property that it preserves the numerical value of words. More formally, given a basis, every two words $w$ and $v$ over the canonical alphabet $A$ satisfy

$$
w \xrightarrow[\rho_{A}]{*} v \text { iff } \pi(w)=\pi(v) .
$$

Fact 2.16. Take a $B$-system with canonical alphabet $A$ and its associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$. Then evidently all words $w \neq v$ for which $w \xrightarrow[\rho_{A}]{*} v$ satisfy $w \succ v$.

We will now show an example of a confluent rewriting system in the context of $B$-systems.
Example 2.17. Consider the basis $B_{n}=3 B_{n-1}+3 B_{n-2}+2 B_{n-3}$. Then $B_{n}=\{1,4,15,59, \ldots\}$, the canonical alphabet is $A=\{0,1,2,3\}$, and $\rho_{A}$ is generated by the rule $0332 \rightarrow 1000$ :

$$
\rho_{A}=\left\{\begin{array}{rrr}
0332 \rightarrow 1000, & 0333 \rightarrow 1001, \\
1332 \rightarrow 2000, & 1333 \rightarrow 2001 \\
2332 \rightarrow 3000, & 2333 \rightarrow 3001
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Let $w=0332333$. Then there are two possible reductions of $w$ :

$$
0332333 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 1000333 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 1001001,
$$

and

$$
0332333 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 0333001 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 1001001
$$

Both reductions lead to the same result, because the rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ is confluent. (See Theorem 2.19.

Compare this with an example of a rewriting system that is not confluent:
Example 2.18. Consider the basis $B_{n}=3 B_{n-1}+2 B_{n-2}+B_{n-3}$. Then $B_{n}=\{1,4,14,51, \ldots\}$, the canonical alphabet is $A=\{0,1,2,3\}$, since $B_{n}$ satisfies the (F) property and $\rho_{A}$ is generated by the rule $0332 \rightarrow 1000$ :

$$
\rho_{A}=\left\{\begin{array}{lllllll}
0321 & \rightarrow 1000, & 0322 & \rightarrow 1001, & \cdots & 0333 & \rightarrow 1012, \\
1321 & \rightarrow 2000, & 1322 & \rightarrow 2001, & \cdots & 1333 & \rightarrow 2012 \\
2321 & \rightarrow 3000, & 2322 & \rightarrow 3001, & \cdots & 2333 & \rightarrow 3012
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Let $w=032333$. Then there are two possible reductions of $w$. Either

$$
0 \underline{323} 33 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 100232,
$$

or

$$
032333 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 033011
$$

Both 100232 are 033011 are irreducible modulo $\rho_{A}$, thus $\rho_{A}$ is not a confluent rewriting system.
Naturally, we are led to ask for what $B$-systems is the associated rewriting system confluent. Frougny showed in [3] that confluent systems can be characterised by the coefficients of their basis.

Theorem 2.19 (Frougny). Suppose a basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ of order $m$ with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m} \in$ $\mathbb{N}_{0}$ and canonical alphabet $A$. Then the rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ associated with the $B$-system is confluent if and only if the coefficients of $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{1}=t_{2}=\cdots=t_{m-1}=a, \quad t_{m}=b \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a \geq b \geq 1$.
The above theorem justifies the following definition.
Definition 2.20. A basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ of order $m$ is called confluent if its coefficients satisfy 2.11. By extension, a $B$-system is confluent if its basis is confluent.

Remark 2.21. Evidently, all confluent $B$-systems are also (F) systems. The opposite inclusion does not hold, as was illustrated by Example 2.18. However, if we limit ourselves to only $B$ systems of order 2 , the confluent and ( F ) systems coincide.

Importantly, the confluence property allows us to perform normalisation by means of a finite transducer, a result due to Frougny [3]. This was one of the initial motivations of the study of such systems. We define what is meant by normalisation.

Definition 2.22. Take a $B$-system with canonical alphabet $A$ and some other alphabet $C \supset A$. Then normalisation is the map $\nu: C^{*} \rightarrow A^{*}$ that assigns to a word $w$ the greedy (normal) representation of the value represented by $w$, i.e.

$$
\nu(w)=\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B} .
$$

In effect, when reducing using the rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ associated with a confluent $B$-system, we are performing normalisation. This can be restated as the following theorem, also from [3]:

Theorem 2.23 (Frougny). Suppose a confuent $B$-system with canonical alphabet $A$. Then normalisation in this system is equivalent to reduction in the associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$. Formally for every $w \in A^{*}$

$$
\nu(w)=\rho_{A}^{*}(w) .
$$

Recall now Example 2.17 .


We can say that the three words 0332333,0333001 , and 1000333 normalise to 1001001.
The interesting property of confluent numeration systems is that in order to perform normalisation, it suffices to use only rules from $\rho_{A}$. In other numeration systems, sometimes we have to go backwards, i.e. use a rule from $\rho_{A}^{-1}$. Take the representation 033011 from Example 2.18. Then 033011 normalises by the use of one backward rule and one forward rule:

$$
033011 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\overleftarrow{ }} 032332 \underset{\rho_{A}}{\longrightarrow} 100232
$$

Another interesting property of confluent systems is that the rewriting system consisting of rules applied in reverse is also confluent. We will call this system the inverse (reverse) rewriting system $\rho^{-1}$. Hence, for a given $B$-system with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$ and canonical alphabet $A=\{0,1, \ldots, a\}$, the associated inverse rewriting system $\rho_{A}^{-1}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho_{A}^{-1}= & \left\{x_{m} x_{m-1} \cdots x_{0} \rightarrow\left(x_{m}-1\right)\left(x_{m-1}+t_{1}\right) \cdots\left(x_{0}+t_{m}\right) \mid\right. \\
& \left.1 \leq x_{m}<a \text { and } 0 \leq x_{m-i} \leq a-t_{i} \text { for all } i \geq 1\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For completeness, we shall establish the concept of the lazy representation of an integer.
Definition 2.24. Suppose a $B$-system with canonical alphabet $A$. Then for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ we define the lazy representation of $n$ as the word $\rangle n\left\langle_{B} \in A^{*}\right.$ that is radix smallest among all the representations of $x$ over the alphabet $A$.

The lazy representation is well-defined, since the set of representations of a number $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ is finite and two different words $w \neq v$ cannot have the same radix value (because that occurs only when $w$ and $v$ are identical). Clearly, if a given number $n$ has only one representation, its lazy and greedy representation coincide.

Example 2.25. Take the $(2,1)$-system. Then the canonical alphabet is $A=\{0,1,2\}$, the basis is equal to $B_{n}=\{1,3,7,17,41,99, \ldots\}$ and the associated rewriting system consists of the rules $\rho_{A}=\{021 \rightarrow 100,121 \rightarrow 200,022 \rightarrow 101,122 \rightarrow 201\}$. The greedy representation of 49 is $10101_{B}$, whereas its lazy representation is $02122_{B}$.

Unfortunately, no direct algorithm for constructing lazy representations is known. The only way they can be obtained is by constructing the greedy representation and reducing it using the associated reverse rewriting system until the lazy representation is reached.

We will now move on to introduce another practical concept for dealing with $B$-systems, which we will utilise in proofs. It is the concept of the so-called factors of value zero, a subset of the $B$-representations of zero. For a given $B$-system, they are easy to determine.

Definition 2.26. Consider a $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and canonical alphabet $A$. Denote by the overline a minus sign, i.e. $\overline{t_{1}}=-t_{1}$. Then the factors of value zero are the words

$$
1 \overline{t_{1} t_{2}} \cdots \overline{t_{m-1} t_{m}}, \quad \overline{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m}
$$

Furthermore, the $m-1$ initial representations of zero (initial factors of value zero) are the $B$-representations

| 1 | $\overline{t_{1}}$ | $\overline{t_{2}}$ | $\cdots$ | $\overline{t_{m-2}}$ | $\overline{t_{m-1}+1}$, | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{m-2}$ | $t_{m-1}+1$, |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | $\overline{t_{1}}$ | $\cdots$ | $\overline{t_{m-3}}$ | $\overline{t_{m-2}+1}$, |  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{m-3}$ | $t_{m-2}+1$, |  |
|  | $\ddots$ | $\ddots$ | $\ddots$ | $\vdots$ |  |  | $\ddots$ | $\ddots$ | $\ddots$ | $\vdots$ |  |
|  |  | 1 | $\overline{t_{1}}$ | $\overline{t_{2}+1}$, |  |  |  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}+1$, |  |
|  |  |  | 1 | $\overline{t_{1}+1}$, |  |  |  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}+1$. |  |  |

If we denote the canonical alphabet $A=\{0,1, \ldots, a\}$, then the factors of value zero are the only words $z$ over $\{-a, \ldots, 0, \ldots, a\}$ such that $\pi(z)=0$ and $|z|=m+1$. We call them factors of value zero because they satisfy this property regardless of how many zeros we write to their right.

On the other hand, the initial representations of zero in general need not have digits contained in $\{-a, \ldots, 0, \ldots, a\}$. This will in occur systems with the ( F ) property whenever a recurrence coefficient $t_{r}, r \geq 2$ exists such that $t_{r}=t_{1}$. Also, all the confluent systems have this property. Moreover, they satisfy $\pi(z)=0$ only if their least significant digit is in the place of $B_{0}$. That is why we will refer to them as initial representations of zero. Note that they are needed because of the initial conditions that we adopted in Definition 2.1 .

In further sections, we will use these representations in proofs when we will need to rewrite a word to another one representing the same value and to ensure that the resulting word has its digits contained in the canonical alphabet $A$. In effect, adding the factor $1 \overline{t_{1} t_{2}} \cdots \overline{t_{m-1} t_{m}}$ digit by digit to some $B$-representation $w$ over an alphabet $C$ containing $A$ corresponds to using one of the rules from the rewriting system $\rho_{C}$ generated by the rule $0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m} \rightarrow 10^{m}$. On the other hand, the initial representations of value zero will serve their purpose at the end of representations, where the standard factor of value zero does not fit.

### 2.1.2 Recognising Greedy Representations

Definition 2.27. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be an (F) basis with coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$. Then the maximal factor is the word

$$
t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

This factor will be pivotal to recognising greedy representations in $B$-systems with the ( F ) property. Namely, we will prove that a word over the canonical alphabet is a greedy representation if and only if it avoids factors which are lexicographically greater than the maximal factor and whose length is smaller than or equal $m$. To ensure that the $B$-system posesses this behaviour is the reason why in Definition 2.1 the basis initial conditions are chosen in the form (2.2). In a way, the initial conditions (2.2) are optimal, which we show in the following example.

Example 2.28. Consider the basis $B_{n}=3 B_{n-1}+2 B_{n-2}+B_{n-3}$. Then $A=\{0,1,2,3\}$ is the canonical alphabet and the maximal factor is equal to $t_{2} t_{1}\left(t_{0}-1\right)=320$. Suppose three sets of initial conditions:
(A) $\left\{\begin{array}{l}B_{0}=1, \\ B_{1}=3 B_{0}=3, \\ B_{2}=3 B_{1}+2 B_{0}=11 .\end{array}\right.$
(B) $\left\{\begin{array}{l}B_{0}=1, \\ B_{1}=3 B_{0}+1=4, \\ B_{2}=3 B_{1}+2 B_{0}+1=15 .\end{array}\right.$
(C) $\left\{\begin{array}{l}B_{0}=1, \\ B_{1}=3 B_{0}+2=5, \\ B_{2}=3 B_{1}+2 B_{0}+2=19 .\end{array}\right.$

Then in case (A) there are words that are not a greedy representation, but do not contain a factor lexicographically greater than the maximal factor. It is for example $\pi\left(3_{B}\right)=3_{\text {DEC }}=$ $\pi\left(10_{B}\right)$ but $3 \nsucc$ lex 320 .

On the other hand, in case (C) there exist values which cannot be represented by a word above the canonical alphabet - for example there is no word $w \in A^{*}$ such that $\pi(w)=4$.
In case (B) none of these occur. Once a word contains a factor greater than the maximal factor, the word is not a greedy representation. Compare:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\pi\left(32_{B}\right) & =14_{\mathrm{DEC}}, & & 32 \prec_{\text {lex }} 320 . \\
\pi\left(100_{B}\right)=\pi\left(33_{B}\right) & =15_{\mathrm{DEC}}, & & 33 \succ_{\text {lex }} 320 .
\end{aligned}
$$

With initial conditions in the form 2.2 , we will now proceed with proving that greedy representations avoid factors greater than the maximal factor. For that we will require the following technical lemma.

Lemma 2.29. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be an $(F)$ basis of order $m$ with canonical alphabet $A$. Then every word $w \in A^{*}$ that has length $|w| \leq N$ and value $\pi(w) \geq B_{N}$ where $N \in \mathbb{N}$, contains a factor of length less than or equal to $m$ that is lexicographically greater than the maximal factor.

Proof. We will prove the claim by induction on the length of the word $w$.

1. $N \in\{1,2, \ldots, m-1\}$ :

Suppose that $w=w_{M} w_{M-1} \ldots w_{0}$, where $|w|=M+1 \leq N$ and $\pi(w) \geq B_{N}$. If $M+1<N$, extend $w$ to length $N$ by adding zeroes to the left.
Then

$$
\pi(w)=\sum_{i=1}^{N} w_{N-i} B_{N-i} \geq B_{N}=\sum_{i=1}^{N} t_{i} B_{N-i}+1
$$

The equality on the right hand side follows from the recurrence relation and initial conditions for $B_{n}$. Together this implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{N}\left(w_{N-i}-t_{i}\right) B_{N-i}-1 \geq 0 \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose now that

$$
w_{N-1} w_{N-2} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \preceq_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{N-1} t_{N} \prec_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

i.e. that there exists an $1 \leq r \leq N$ such that $w_{N-r}<t_{r}$ and $w_{N-j}=t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j<r$. Then, we can rewrite inequality (2.12) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=r+1}^{N}\left(w_{N-i}-t_{i}\right) B_{N-i}-1 \geq-\left(w_{N-r}-t_{r}\right) B_{N-r} \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because $t_{q} \geq 1$ for all $q \in\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$ and $0 \leq w_{N-i} \leq t_{1}$ for all $1 \leq i \leq N$, the coefficients $\left(w_{N-i}-t_{i}\right)$ in the sum on the left hand side of (2.12) (and (2.13) ) are at most equal to $t_{1}-1$ for all $r<i \leq N$. We can therefore bound the left hand side of 2.13 by

$$
\sum_{i=r+1}^{N}\left(w_{N-i}-t_{i}\right) B_{N-i}-1<\sum_{i=r+1}^{N}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-i},
$$

which after reindexing is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(w_{N-r-i}-t_{r+i}\right) B_{N-r-i}-1<\sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-r-i} \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, $\left(w_{N-r}-t_{r}\right)$ is smaller than or equal to -1 , so we bound the right hand side of (2.13) followingly:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\left(w_{N-r}-t_{r}\right) B_{N-r} \geq B_{N-r}=\sum_{i=1}^{N-r} t_{i} B_{N-r-i}+1 . \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lastly, we will verify that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{N-r} t_{i} B_{N-r-i}+1 \geq \sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-r-i} . \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can rewrite this inequality as

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{N-r} t_{i} B_{N-r-i}-\sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-r-i}+1 \geq 0
$$

and write it as the digit by digit sum

$$
\begin{array}{ccccc}
\frac{t_{1}}{} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{N-r-1} & t_{N-r}+1 \\
\hline t_{1}-1 & \overline{t_{1}-1} & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}-1} & \overline{t_{1}-1} \\
\hline * & * & \cdots & * & *
\end{array}
$$

We want to prove that all digits marked $*$ will be non-negative. If $N-r \leq 1$, the proof is completed. Hence suppose now that $N-r>1$.
Then using the initial conditions of the basis we may add the first $N-r-1$ initial representations of zero, resulting in

| $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}$ | $t_{3}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{N-r-1}$ | $t_{N-r}+1$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{N-r-2}$ | $t_{N-r-1}+1$ |
|  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{N-r-3}$ | $t_{N-r-2}+1$ |
|  |  | $\overline{1}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{N-r-4}$ | $t_{N-r-3}+1$ |
|  |  |  | $\ddots$ | $\vdots$ | $\vdots$ |
| $\overline{t_{1}-1}$ | $\overline{t_{1}-1}$ | $\overline{t_{1}-1}$ | $\cdots$ | $\overline{t_{1}-1}$ | $\frac{t_{1}+1}{t_{1}-1}$ |
| $*$ | $*$ | $*$ | $\cdots$ | $*$ | $*$ |

Due to the ( F ) property, all digits marked $*$ will be non-negative, thus proving inequality (2.16). Together with the previous inequalities (2.13), (2.14), and (2.15) we have derived the contradiction

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-r-i} & \stackrel{\sqrt{2.14]}}{>} \sum_{i=r+1}^{N}\left(w_{N-i}-t_{i}\right) B_{N-i}-1 \\
& \stackrel{[2.13}{\geq}-\left(w_{N-r}-t_{r}\right) B_{N-r} \stackrel{[2.15}{\geq} \sum_{i=1}^{N-r} t_{i} B_{N-r-i}+1 \stackrel{\sqrt{2.16}}{\geq} \sum_{i=1}^{N-r}\left(t_{1}-1\right) B_{N-r-i}
\end{aligned}
$$

In other words, if there is some digit $w_{r}<t_{r}$ and $w_{m-j}=t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j<r$, then regardless of how large the digits $w_{r-1}, w_{r-2}, \ldots, w_{0} \in A$ are, they will not be sufficient to satisfy the inequality (2.12) and ensure that the expression on the left hand side is nonnegative, which is a contradiction.
Finally, if $w_{N-j}=t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq N$, then the sum $\sum_{i=1}^{N} w_{N-i} B_{N-i}$ is equal to $\sum_{i=1}^{N} t_{i} B_{N-i}$, which is again in contradiction with 2.12.
Therefore, there must exist a $1 \leq r \leq N$ such that $w_{N-r}>t_{r}$ and $w_{N-j}=t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j<r$, from which by definition

$$
w_{N-1} w_{N-2} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \succ_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

2. $\{1,2, \ldots, N\} \longrightarrow N+1$, where $N \geq m$ :

Consider a word $z=z_{M} z_{M-1} \cdots z_{1} z_{0} \in A^{*}$ such that $|z|=M+1 \leq N+1$ and $\pi(z) \geq B_{N+1}$, where $N \geq m$. If $M+1<N+1$, extend $z$ to length $N+1$ by adding zeroes to the left. Then clearly

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{N} z_{j} B_{j}=\pi(z) \geq B_{N+1}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} t_{i} B_{N+1-i} .
$$

Subtracting $z_{N} B_{N}$ yields

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{N-1} z_{j} B_{j} \geq\left(t_{1}-z_{N}\right) B_{N}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} t_{i} B_{N+1-i}
$$

If $z_{N}<t_{1}$, then the word $z_{N-1} \cdots z_{1} z_{0}$ of length $N$ represents a value larger than $B_{N}$. By induction it contains a factor larger than the maximal factor and since $z_{N-1} \cdots z_{1} z_{0}$ is a suffix of $z, z$ also contains this factor.
Suppose now that $z_{N}=t_{1}$. We know that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=0}^{N-1} z_{j} B_{j} \geq \sum_{i=2}^{m} t_{i} B_{N+1-i} \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and one of the following three cases occurs:
(a) $z_{N+1-r}>t_{r}$ holds for some $r \in\{2, \ldots, m\}$ and $z_{N+1-l}=t_{l}$ for all $2 \leq l<r$. Then evidently the prefix $z_{N} z_{N-1} \cdots z_{N+1-r}$ of the word $z$ is lexicographically greater than the maximal factor.
(b) $z_{N+1-l}=t_{l}$ for all $2 \leq l \leq m$. Then clearly

$$
z_{N} z_{N-1} \cdots z_{N+2-m} z_{N+1-m}=t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m} \succ_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

(c) $z_{N+1-r}<t_{r}$ for some $r \in\{2, \ldots, m\}$ and $z_{N+1-l}=t_{l}$ for all $2 \leq l \leq r$. The word $z$ and maximal factor have the common prefix $t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{r-1}$. Consider the word $z^{(1)}$ obtained by removing this prefix from $z$ and the word $y^{(1)}$ formed from the coefficients of the sum on the right hand side of (2.17) also with the same prefix removed:

$$
\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
z^{(1)} & := & z_{N+1-r} & z_{N-r} & \cdots & z_{N+1-m} & z_{N-m} & \cdots & z_{1} & z_{0}, \\
y^{(1)} & := & t_{r} & t_{r+1} & \cdots & t_{m} & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 .
\end{array}
$$

Surely $\pi\left(z^{(1)}\right) \geq \pi\left(y^{(1)}\right)$, as the inequality 2.17) cannot change by removing the same prefix (which corresponds to subtracting the same value from both sides). Then the inequality $\pi\left(z^{(1)}\right) \geq \pi\left(y^{(1)}\right)$ is equivalent to

$$
z_{N+1-r} B_{N+1-r}+\sum_{j=0}^{N-r} z_{j} B_{j} \geq t_{r} B_{N+1-r}+\sum_{i=2}^{m} t_{i} B_{N+1-r-i} .
$$

After subtracting $z_{N+1-r} B_{N+1-r}$ we obtain

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{N-r} z_{j} B_{j} \geq \underbrace{\left(t_{r}-z_{N+1-r}\right)}_{\geq 1} B_{N+1-r}
$$

Hence the word $z^{(2)}=z_{N-r} z_{N-r-1} \cdots z_{1} z_{0}$ has length $N+1-r$, but represents a value greater than $B_{N+1-r}$. By induction $z^{(2)}$ contains a factor greater than the maximal factor and so does the word $z$.

We will now use the above lemma to prove the fundamental theorem about the language of greedy representations.
Theorem 2.30 (Language of Greedy Representations). Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be an (F) basis of order $m$ with canonical alphabet $A$. Then $L(B)$ is equal to

$$
\begin{align*}
L(B)=\left\{w \in A^{*} \mid\right. & \text { no factor } u \text { of } w \text { of length }|u|=d \leq m  \tag{2.18}\\
& \text { is lexicographically greater than the maximal factor. }\} .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We will prove two inclusions. Denote $X$ the set on the right hand side of (2.18).
$\mathbf{L}(\mathbf{B}) \subseteq \mathbf{X}:$
Consider some $x \in L(B)$ and suppose that $x$ contains a factor $u$ of length $2 \leq d \leq m$ such that

$$
u=x_{i-1} x_{i-2} \cdots x_{i-d+1} x_{i-d} \succ_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right),
$$

where $i \geq m$. Let $i$ be the maximal index with this property. From the definition of the lexicographic order this means that an $r \in\{1,2, \ldots, d\}$ exists such that $x_{i-r}>t_{r}$ and $x_{i-s}=t_{s}$ for all $1 \leq s<r$, or that $d=m$, and $x_{i-q}=t_{q}$ for all $1 \leq q \leq m$. In the latter case, we can surely rewrite $x$ by adding a factor of value zero starting at the digit $x_{i}$.

$$
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\cdots & x_{i} & x_{i-1} & x_{i-2} & \cdots & x_{i-m+1} & x_{i-m} & \cdots  \tag{2.19}\\
& 1 & \bar{t}_{1} & \bar{t}_{2} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & \bar{t}_{m} & \\
\hline \cdots & x_{i}+1 & x_{i-1}-t_{1} & x_{i-2}-t_{2} & \cdots & x_{i-m+1}-t_{m-1} & x_{i-m}-t_{m} & \cdots
\end{array}
$$

In the former case, we have to proceed more carefully. There can be a digit $x_{i-p}<t_{p}$ for some $s<p \leq m$, thus we have to add another factor of value zero (but with the opposite sign) in place of $x_{i-r}$. We can do this because we know that $x_{i-r}>t_{r}$ :

$$
\begin{array}{cccccccccccccc}
\cdots & x_{i} & x_{i-1} & \cdots & x_{i-r} & x_{i-r-1} & \cdots & x_{i-p} & x_{i-p} & x_{i-p} & \cdots & x_{i-m} & x_{i-m-1} & \cdots  \tag{2.20}\\
& 1 & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{r}} & \overline{t_{r+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{p-1}} & \overline{t_{p}} & \overline{t_{p+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{m}} & & \\
& & & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{p-r-1} & t_{p-r} & t_{p-r+1} & \cdots & t_{m-r} & t_{m-r+1} & \cdots \\
\hline \cdots & x_{i}+1 & * & \cdots & * & ? & \cdots & ? & * & ? & \cdots & ? & ? & \cdots
\end{array}
$$

Since the basis has the (F) property, all the resulting digits marked with an asterisk $*$ are non-negative and contained in the alphabet $A$. Digits marked ? will be also non-negative, but not necessarily contained in $A$. There can be an index $q \in\{r+1, \ldots, m\}, q \neq p$ such that $x_{i-q}-t_{q}+t_{q-r}>t_{1}$ or an index $s \in\{m-r+1, \ldots, m\}$ such that $x_{i-s+r}+t_{s}>t_{1}$. In that case we can again add another factor of value zero and reduce the value of the digit concerned whilst keeping the value of the whole representation unchanged. This may again introduce digits that are not contained in $A$, but since the representation is finite, this rewriting process will always end and yield a representation with digits contained in $A$. It is because we will never create digits strictly larger than $t_{1}$ to the left of the digit $x_{i-r}$ and because the index $r$ will be strictly smaller in each subsequent addition. If we encounter digits not contained in $A$ close to $x_{0}$ (the digit at $B_{0}$ ), we proceed as in the following paragraph.

Suppose now that $i<m$. We will use the same approach as above, the only difference is that we will use the initial representations of zero instead of the factors of value zero. Analogically to (2.19), if $x_{i-j} \geq t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j<i$ and $x_{0}>t_{i}$, we add a representation of zero:

$$
\begin{array}{cccccc}
\cdots & x_{i} & x_{i-1} & \cdots & x_{1} & \frac{x_{0}}{}  \tag{2.21}\\
& 1 & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{i-1}} & \overline{t_{i}+1} \\
\hline \cdots & x_{i}+1 & x_{i-1}-t_{1} & \cdots & x_{1}-t_{i-1} & x_{0}-t_{i}-1 .
\end{array}
$$

On the other hand, if $x_{i-r}>t_{r}$ and $x_{i-j}=t_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq r-1$ and there exists a $r+1 \leq p \leq i$ such that $x_{i-p}<t_{p}$, we add two initial representations of zero, analogically to what was done in 2.20):

$$
\begin{array}{ccccccccccccc}
\cdots & x_{i} & x_{i-1} & \cdots & x_{i-r} & x_{i-r-1} & \cdots & x_{i-p} & x_{i-p} & x_{i-p} & \cdots & x_{1} & x_{0}  \tag{2.22}\\
& 1 & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{r}} & \overline{t_{r+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{p-1}} & \overline{t_{p}} & \overline{t_{p+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{i-1}} & \overline{t_{i}+1} \\
& & & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{p-r-1} & t_{p-r} & t_{p-r+1} & \cdots & t_{i-s-1} & t_{i-s}+1 \\
\hline \cdots & x_{i}+1 & * & \cdots & * & ? & \cdots & ? & * & ? & \cdots & ? & ?
\end{array}
$$

Again, due to the ( F ) property, all digits marked $*$ will be non-negative and contained in $A$. Digits marked ? are also non-negative, but not necessarily contained in $A$. If there is a digit among them that is not contained in $A$ (i.e. there exists an index $s+1 \leq q<i, q \neq p$ such that $x_{i-q}-t_{q}+t_{q-s}>t_{1}$ ), we repeat adding initial representations of zero as in 2.21) and 2.22) until all the resulting digits are contained in $A$. This process must end because of three reasons: we will never create digits strictly larger than $t_{1}$ to the left of the digit $x_{i-r}, r$ will be smaller in each subsequent addition, and the representation is finite.

Lastly, notice that $x_{i}+1 \leq t_{1}$, because if $x_{i}+1>t_{1}$, then $x_{i}=t_{1}$ and we would have

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{i} x_{i-1} x_{i-2} \cdots x_{i-d+2} x_{i-d+1} x_{i-d} \succ_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-2} t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right) . \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the (F) property we can see that

$$
t_{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-2} t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right) \succeq_{\operatorname{lex}} t_{1} t_{2} t_{3} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

using this with 2.23) and removing the last digit $\left(t_{m}-1\right)$ from both strings (which does not change the inequality) yields

$$
x_{i} x_{i-1} \cdots x_{i-d+2} x_{i-d+1} \succ_{\text {lex }} t_{1} t_{2} t_{3} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)
$$

which is a contradiction with our definition of $i$.
In all four cases 2.19, 2.20, 2.21, 2.22 we have constructed a representation $\hat{x} \in A^{*}$ which satisfies $\pi(\hat{x})=\pi(x)$ and $\hat{x} \succ x$, which is a contradiction with property 2 of greedy representations - if $x$ is greedy, then it must be the greatest among all representations of $\pi(x)$ in the radix order. Therefore $L(B) \subseteq X$.

## $\mathbf{L}(\mathbf{B}) \supseteq \mathbf{X}$ :

Let $w=w_{M} w_{M-1} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \in A^{*}$ and suppose that $w \notin L(B)$. We will show that $w$ contains a factor greater than the maximal factor.

Take the greedy representation of the value $\pi(w)$ and denote its digits $\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B}=x_{N} \cdots x_{0}$. From property 2 of greedy representations we have $\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B} \succ w$. By definition of the radix order, precisely one of the following occurs:
a) $\left|\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B}\right|>|w|$.
b) $\left|\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B}\right|=|w|=N+1$ and an index $r, N+1 \geq r \geq 0$ exists such that $x_{r}>w_{r}$ and $x_{l}=w_{l}$ for all $N+1 \geq l>r$.

Case a): From the greedy algorithm we know that $\pi(w) \geq B_{N}$. At the same time $|w| \leq N$. Hence, by Lemma 2.29 the word $w$ contains a factor greater than the maximal factor.
Case b): Let $\left|\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B}\right|=|w|=N+1$ and $x_{r}>w_{r}$ for some $N+1 \geq r \geq 0$ and $N+1 \geq l>i$
for all $x_{l}=w_{l}$. We will modify the words $w$ and $\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B}$ and then apply the Lemma 2.29. By removing the common prefix $w_{1} w_{2} \cdots w_{r-1}$ we obtain the words

$$
\begin{aligned}
x^{(1)} & =x_{N-r} x_{N-r-1} \cdots x_{1} x_{0}, \\
w^{(1)} & =w_{N-r} w_{N-r-1} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Evidently $\pi\left(x^{(1)}\right)=\pi\left(w^{(1)}\right)$, therefore

$$
x_{N+1-r} B_{N+1-r}+\sum_{j=0}^{N-r} x_{j} B_{j}=w_{N+1-r} B_{N+1-r}+\sum_{j=0}^{N-r} w_{j} B_{j},
$$

subtracting $w_{N+1-r} B_{N+1-r}$ yields

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{N-r} w_{j} B_{j} \geq \underbrace{\left(x_{N+1-r}-w_{N+1-r}\right)}_{\geq 1} B_{N+1-r} .
$$

The word $w^{(2)}=w_{N-r} w_{N-r-1} \cdots w_{1} w_{0}$ has length $N+1-r$, but represents a value greater than $B_{N+1-r}$. Thus by Lemma $2.29 w^{(2)}$ contains a factor greater than the maximal factor, and since it is a suffix of $w, w$ contains this factor too.

## Chapter 3

## Ambiguity of Linear Numeration Systems

As has been noted in the previous chapter, $B$-systems are redundant. In a given $B$-system, most natural numbers have more than one representation over the canonical alphabet. For the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems, much has been done to describe and quantify the ambiguity of such systems [1, 2, 11, 12]. Our main contribution consists in generalising these results to all confluent $B$-systems.

In this and next chapter we study the redundancy of confluent $B$-systems in terms of the redundancy function $R(n)$.

Definition 3.1. Consider a $B$-system. Then the redundancy function $R(n)$ is defined as the number of all $B$-representations of the natural number $n$ over the canonical alphabet $A$. Formally,

$$
R(n):=\#\left\{v \in A^{*} \mid \pi(v)=n\right\} .
$$

Similarly, for a greedy representation $w=\langle n\rangle_{B}$, denote by $R(w)$ the number of possible $B$ representations of the number $n$.

In this chapter we will mostly use the function $R$ in the latter notation. In Section 3.1 we will introduce the algorithm for calculating $R(n)$ and lay out its technical requirements. A more detailed description of the C++ program can be found in the Appendix along with instructions on its usage. We will follow this in Section 3.2 with computational results of our algorithm and statement of claims that can be inferred from the data, which will be later verified and proved in Chapter 4 We start with a motivational example.

Example 3.2. Consider the $B$-system with basis $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-1}$. Then the first elements of the basis are $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}=\{1,3,7,17,41,99,239, \ldots\}$, and the associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ conists of four rules: $100 \rightarrow 021,101 \rightarrow 022,200 \rightarrow 121$, and $201 \rightarrow 122$. Let $w=1020100$. Then $R(w)=6$, since all the possible $B$-representations representing the value $\pi(w)=1 \cdot 239+$ $2 \cdot 41+1 \cdot 7=328$ are 1020100, 1020021, 1012200, 1012121, 0222200, and 0222121, and the representations are related to each other by the following rewritings:

| 1020100 | $\overleftarrow{\rho_{A}}$ | 1012200 | $\overleftarrow{\rho_{A}}$ | 0222200 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\rho_{A} \uparrow$ |  | $\rho_{A} \uparrow$ |  | $\rho_{A} \uparrow$ |
| 1020021 | $\overleftarrow{\rho_{A}}$ | 1012121 | $\overleftarrow{\rho_{A}}$ | 0222121 |

On the other hand, let $u=1020202$. Then $R(u)=1$, since there is no way any factor of $u$ can be rewritten using the four rules from the associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$. Another possible view can be that the addition of the factor of value zero $\overline{1} 21$ to some factor of $u$ would result in a string that has digits not contained in the canonical alphabet $\{0,1,2\}$.

### 3.1 Calculating $R(n)$

This section lays out the technical requirements for the practical calculation of $R(n)$.
To be able to calculate the $R(n)$ function and to study its properties in all (F) systems, we have to bound the interval on which it will be calculated. Suppose we have chosen some bounds $n_{\min }, n_{\max }$. Then the calculation of $R(n)$ for all $n_{\min } \leq n \leq n_{\max }$ is done by a simple algorithm:

## Algorithm:

Denote by $\mathrm{R}(n)$ the intermediate values of $R(n)$. Initialise $\mathrm{R}(n)$ to zero for all $n_{\text {min }} \leq n \leq n_{\text {max }}$. Then, for all words $w \in A^{*}$ that satisfy $\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B} \preceq w \preceq\left\langle n_{\max }\right\rangle_{B}$ do:

1. Set $\mathrm{R}(\pi(w)):=\mathrm{R}(\pi(w))+1$.
2. Increment $w$ by one in the radix order, i.e. increment it as if it was a standard $b$-ary representation.

After the algorithm terminates, $\mathrm{R}(n)$ will equal $R(n)$ for all $n_{\min } \leq n \leq n_{\text {max }}$. However, this simple algorithm can fail to compute correct values of $R(n)$ for $n$ that are close to the bound $n_{\min }$. Since we are counting all representations and not just the greedy representations, there can surely be a representation $u$ such that $u \prec\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B}$ but $\pi(u)>n_{\min }$, as in the following example:

Example 3.3. Consider the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system. Then $B_{n}=(1,3,7,17, \ldots)$. Let $\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B}=100_{B}$ and $u=022_{B}$. Then $u \prec\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B}$ but $\pi(w)=8>7=n_{\text {min }}$.

Therefore, if we set $n_{\min }:=7$ and proceeded with counting $R(n)$ as in the above algorithm, we would come to the false result that $R(8)=1$, because we would have omitted the non-greedy representation $022_{B}$.

The converse case, i.e. a representation $v$ such that $v \succ\left\langle n_{\max }\right\rangle_{B}$ but $\pi(v)<n_{\max }$ cannot occur due to property 3 of greedy representations (see Theorem 2.14). We thus have to replace the bound $\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B}$ with $\rangle n_{\min }\left\langle_{B}\right.$, counting all the words $\rangle n_{\min }\left\langle_{B} \preceq w \preceq\left\langle n_{\max }\right\rangle_{B}\right.$.

Unfortunately, in general there is no way to obtain $\rangle n_{\min }\left\langle_{B}\right.$ other than determining all the possible $B$-representations of $n_{\min }$ and selecting the radix smallest one. To rectify this, we have to select the bound $n_{\min }$ such that every representation $u \prec\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B}$ has a value $\pi(u)$ strictly smaller than $n_{\text {min }}$. Thankfully, such bounds are easy to find, which we do in the following technical lemma.

Lemma 3.4. Consider an $(F)$ basis $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$. Then for every $k \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ the following holds:

1. $R\left(B_{k}-1\right)=1$.
2. For every word $w \in A^{*}$, where $A$ is the canonical alphabet, $w \prec\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ iff $\pi(w)<B_{k}-1$.
3. Likewise, for every word $w \in A^{*}, w \succ\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ iff $\pi(w)>B_{k}-1$.

Proof. Let $\left(B_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be an (F) basis of order $m$, denote its coefficients $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$. Let $k \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Then the greedy representation of $B_{k}-1$ will have the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}=\left(t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\right)^{\left\lfloor\frac{k}{m}\right.}\right\rfloor_{t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{q-1} t_{q}} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q$ is the remainder of the division of $k$ by $m$, formally $q=k-\left\lfloor\frac{k}{m}\right\rfloor m .\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ will be equal to (3.1) because of two reasons.

Firstly, $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ must be the largest greedy representation of length $k$, since the greedy representation of $B_{k}$ is $\left\langle B_{k}\right\rangle_{B}=10_{B}^{k}$, which has length $k+1$ (and it is the radix smallest representation of length $k+1$ ).

Secondly, due to Theorem 2.30 , a greedy representation in a $B$-system with the ( F ) property avoids any factor larger than the maximal factor. The representation on the right hand side of (3.1) is precisely the (radix) largest possible $B$-representation of length $k$ that does not contain a maximal factor, so it must be equal to $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$.

Let us now prove statement 1 of the lemma. The case $k=0$ is trivial, since $B_{0}-1=0$, which has only one representation over the canonical alphabet $A$. Hence, let $k>0$ and suppose now that $B_{k}-1$ has another $B$-representation $w$. Surely $w$ can be reached by one or more additions of the factor of value zero to $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$. However, we will show that any word created this way will have digits that are not contained in $A$. Because the $B$-system has the ( F ) property, the canonical alphabet is equal to $A=\left\{0,1, \ldots, t_{1}\right\}$. As the greedy representation $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ is equal to (3.1), there is no valid location to add the factor of value zero, because at least one resulting digit will be strictly greater than $t_{1}$. Furthermore, if we try to subsequently shrink this digit by adding $t_{r+1}$ factors of zero, we will again introduce at least one digit that is greater than $t_{1}$, as seen below in (3.2).

| $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}=$ | $t_{1}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{r}$ | $t_{r+1}$ | $t_{r+2}$ | $t_{r+3}$ | $\cdots$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}$ | $t_{3}$ | $\cdots$ |  |
|  |  | $t_{r}-1$ | $t_{r+1}+t_{1}$ | $t_{r+2}+t_{2}$ | $t_{r+3}+t_{3}$ | $\cdots$ |  |
|  |  |  | $\overline{1}$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{2}$ | $\cdots$ |  |
|  |  |  |  | $\vdots$ | $\vdots$ | $t_{1}$ | $\cdots$ |
| $w=$ | $w_{k-1}$ | $\cdots$ | $t_{r}-1$ | $t_{1}$ | $t_{r+2}+t_{2}+t_{r+1} \cdot t_{1}$ | $t_{r+3}+t_{3}+t_{r+1} \cdot t_{2}$ | $\cdots$ |

This applies also if we add the factor of value zero in the place of $t_{m-1}$ (thus adding $t_{1}$ in the place of $t_{m}-1$ ). If $t_{m}-1=0$, then $t_{m}-1+t_{1} \in A$, but we will again introduce digits that are not contained in $A$ in other locations, as seen below in (3.3).

$$
\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}= & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots  \tag{3.3}\\
& & & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & t_{2} & t_{3} & \cdots \\
\hline & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{m-1}-1 & t_{1} & t_{1}+t_{2} & t_{2}+t_{3} & \cdots \\
& & & & & 1 & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{2}} & \cdots \\
\hline w= & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{m-1}-1 & t_{1}+1 & t_{2} & t_{3} & \cdots
\end{array}
$$

The same argument holds also at the end of the representation (i.e. close to the digit at $B_{0}$ ). Therefore, $w$ cannot have its digits contained in $A$, which is a contradiction.

Statement 2; $(\Rightarrow)$ : Take a word $w \in A^{*}$ such that $w \prec\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$. Then by definition of the radix order, it is either a) shorter than $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$, denote $|w|=l<k$, or b) it has the same length
as $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ and there exists an index $s \in\{0,1, \ldots, k-1\}$ such that $w_{k-s}<\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}\right)_{k-s}$ and $w$ and $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ share a common prefix of length $s$. We will treat both cases simultaneously.

In case b) first remove the common prefix from both words. This yields the words

$$
\begin{align*}
w^{*} & =w_{k-s-1} w_{k-s-2} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \\
\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*} & =t_{p} t_{p+1} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\left(t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\right)^{q} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{r-1} t_{r}, \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $1 \leq p \leq m-1$, and $0 \leq q \leq\left\lfloor\frac{k}{m}\right\rfloor$.
Case a) can be converted to case b) by setting $s=0$ and $w_{k-1}=w_{k-2}=\cdots=w_{l}=0$, which yields $w^{*}=0 \cdots 0 w$. Lastly, set $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}=\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$.

To prove $B_{k}-1>\pi(w)$ we will evaluate the sign of $\pi\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}\right)-\pi\left(w^{*}\right)$, because clearly $\pi\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}\right)-\pi\left(w^{*}\right)>0$ implies $B_{k}-1>\pi(w)$. Evidently, we can bound $\pi\left(w^{*}\right)$ followingly:

$$
\pi\left(w^{*}\right) \leq w_{k-s-1} B_{k-s-1}+\sum_{i=0}^{k-s-2} t_{1} B_{i} .
$$

That is, we replace every digit of $w^{*}$ other than the most significant one with $t_{1}$.
Using (3.4), we can write the expression

$$
\pi\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}\right)-w_{k-s-1} B_{k-s-1}-\sum_{i=0}^{k-s-2} t_{1} B_{i}
$$

digit by digit as

$$
\begin{array}{ccccc|ccc|c|ccc|cccc}
t_{p} & t_{p+1} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{r-1} & t_{r} \\
w_{k-s-1} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \bar{t}_{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \bar{t}_{1} & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \bar{t}_{1}
\end{array},
$$

where by vertical lines we delimit each repetition of the factor $t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)$ in $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}$. We know that $t_{p}>w_{k-s-1}$, and since the basis has the ( F ) property, $t_{i} \geq 1$ holds for all $i=1,2, \ldots, m$. We can thus add the factor $\overline{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-2} t_{m-1} t_{m}$ (that has numeric value zero) at every digit. This results in adding $t_{1}$ to the next digit to the right, which cancels out with $\overline{t_{1}}$ and together this always yields a digit that is non-negative. The only location in which we cannot subtract 1 is in the location of the digit $t_{m}-1$, because if $t_{m}=1$, then $t_{m}-1=0$. However, as can be seen from (3.5) and due to the fact that $m$ is at least 2 and $t_{i} \geq 1$, we will still obtain a non-negative digit at that location. Also, this results in an addition of at least 1 to the digit to the right of $t_{m}-1$, allowing us to subtract 1 again and cancel out $\overline{t_{1}}$ in every location in the following appearance of the $t_{1} t_{2} t_{3} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m}-1$ factor.


At the start and in the middle of the representation, the subtraction will proceed as shown above in (3.5). In the middle, $\overline{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-2} t_{m-1} t_{m}$ is repeatedly shifted and added at every digit except for the digit that has value $t_{m}-1$.

At the end of the representation, if $r \geq 1$, the subtraction is as in 3.6). In total, all digits marked with an asterisk $(*)$ will be non-negative, and the digit at $B_{0}$ (marked with a plus sign + ) will be always positive:

$$
\begin{array}{ccc|ccccc}
\cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{r-1} & t_{r}  \tag{3.6}\\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
& \overline{1} & t_{1} & t_{2} & t_{3} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m} \\
& & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{m-2} & t_{m-1}+1 \\
& & & & \overline{1} & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
& & & & & \cdots & t_{1} & t_{2}+1 \\
& & & & & & \overline{1} & t_{1}+1 \\
\cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} \\
\hline \hline \cdots & * & * & * & * & * & * & +
\end{array}
$$

Otherwise, if $r=0$, then the addition is as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{||ccc|ccccc}
\cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 & t_{1} & t_{2} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m}-1 \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
& \overline{1} & t_{1} & t_{2} & t_{3} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m} \\
& & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{m-2} & t_{m-1}+1 \\
& & & & \overline{1} & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
& & & & & \cdots & t_{1} & t_{2}+1 \\
& & & & & & \overline{1} & t_{1}+1 \\
\cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} \\
\hline \hline \cdots & * & * & * & * & * & * & +
\end{array}
$$

and again the digit at $B_{0}$ is positive.
Together, this yields the desired inequality $\pi\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}^{*}\right)-\pi\left(w^{*}\right)>0$ and so $B_{k}-1>\pi(w)$.
Part 2; $(\Leftarrow)$ : Let $\pi(w)<B_{k}-1$. Then $w \prec\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ follows from properties 2 and 3 of the greedy representation, i.e. every representation $w$ such that $\pi(w)<B_{k}-1$ must satisfy $w \preceq\langle\pi(w)\rangle_{B} \prec\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$.

Part 3; $(\Rightarrow)$ : Let $w \succ\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$. Then either $w$ is longer than $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ and so $\pi(w) \geq$ $B_{k}$, from which $\pi(w)>B_{k}-1$ clearly follows, or $|w|=\left|\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}\right|$ and there exists an $s \in$ $\{0,1, \ldots, k-1\}$ such that $w$ and $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ share a common prefix of length $s$ and $\left.w_{k-s-1}\right\rangle$ $\left(\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}\right)_{k-s-1}$. In this case, remove the common prefix, which yields the representations

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{w} & =w_{k-s-1} w_{k-s-2} \cdots w_{1} w_{0} \\
\left\langle\widetilde{B_{k}-1}\right\rangle_{B} & =t_{p} t_{p+1} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\left(t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1}\left(t_{m}-1\right)\right)^{q} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{r-1} t_{r} \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where again $1 \leq p \leq m-1$, and $0 \leq q \leq\left\lfloor\frac{k}{m}\right\rfloor$. The number $\pi(\widetilde{w})$ can clearly be bounded followingly:

$$
\pi(\widetilde{w}) \geq w_{k-s-1} B_{k-s-1}
$$

and so we can write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left.\pi(\widetilde{w})-\pi\left(\widetilde{\left\langle B_{k}-1\right.}\right\rangle_{B}\right) \geq w_{k-s-1} B_{k-s-1}-\pi\left(\widetilde{\left\langle B_{k}-1\right.}\right\rangle_{B}\right) \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The expression on the right of 3.8 can be written digit by digit as

| $w_{k-s-1}$ | $\frac{0}{t_{p}}$ | $\ldots$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $\cdots$ | $\ldots$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | $\ldots$ | 0 | 0 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $t_{p+1}$ | $\ldots$ | $\overline{t_{m-1}}$ | $\overline{t_{m}-1}$ | $\overline{t_{1}}$ | $\frac{1}{t_{2}}$ | $\cdots$ | $\ldots$ | $\overline{t_{m-1}}$ | $\frac{0}{t_{m}-1}$ | $\frac{1}{t_{1}}$ | $\ldots$ | $\overline{t_{r-1}}$ | $\frac{1}{t_{r}}$ |  |

We will now proceed as in part 2. Clearly the digit $w_{k-s-1}$ satisfies $w_{k-s-1}>t_{p}$, so we can add the factor $\overline{1} t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-2} t_{m-1} t_{m}$. Then, since the basis has the ( F ) property, $t_{1} \geq t_{2} \geq \cdots \geq t_{m}$ and so we will obtain a non-negative digit (marked $*$ ) in every column:

$$
\begin{array}{cccc|ccccccc|cc}
w_{k-s-1} & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots  \tag{3.9}\\
\overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{m-p-2} & t_{m-p-1} & \cdots & t_{m} & & & & & & \\
& & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots & t_{p+1} & t_{p+2} & \cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m} & & \\
& & & & & & & & & & \overline{1} & t_{1} & \cdots \\
& & & & & & & & & & & & \\
\overline{t_{p}} & \overline{t_{p+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{m}-1} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{p}} & \overline{t_{p+1}} & \cdots & \overline{t_{m-1}} & \overline{t_{m}-1} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots \\
\hline \hline * & * & \cdots & * & * & * & \cdots & * & * & * & * & * & \cdots
\end{array}
$$

The subtraction is much simpler than in part 2 , and like in part 2 we are left with a positive digit at $B_{0}$ :

$$
\begin{array}{||ccc|ccccc}
\cdots & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & 0 \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
\cdots & t_{m-1} & t_{m} & & & & & \\
\cdots & \overline{t_{m-1}} & \overline{t_{m}-1} & \overline{t_{1}} & \overline{t_{1}} & \cdots & t_{t_{2-1}} & t_{r}+1 \\
\hline \hline \cdots & * & * & * & * & * & * & +
\end{array}
$$

Together this yields

$$
\left.w_{k-s-1} B_{k-s-1}-\pi\left(\widetilde{\left\langle B_{k}-1\right.}\right\rangle_{B}\right)>0
$$

and so the desired inequality $\pi(w)>B_{k}-1$.
Part 3; $(\Leftarrow)$ : Let $\pi(w)>B_{k}-1$. In case when $w$ is longer than $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$, the inequality $w \succ\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ is evident from definition, so let $w$ be such that $|w|=\left|\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}\right|$. Then since $\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ is the radix largest greedy representation of this length, $w$ is not a greedy representation. Therefore, $w$ contains a factor that is larger than the maximal factor and so $w \succ\left\langle B_{k}-1\right\rangle_{B}$.

With Lemma 3.4 in hand, we can proceed to calculate $R(n)$. In effect, part 2 of Lemma 3.4 would be sufficient for our needs. In counting $R(n)$ for all $n \in\left\{n_{\min }, n_{\min }+1, \ldots, n_{\max }\right\}$ we will traverse all the words $\left\langle n_{\min }\right\rangle_{B} \preceq w \preceq\left\langle n_{\max }\right\rangle_{B}$, and since the greedy representation is the radix greatest among all representations of a given number, we will not omit any representation of $n_{\max }$. If we encounter a $w$ such that $\pi(w)>n_{\max }$, we can ignore it.

Thus, if we want to determine $R(n)$ on the interval $n \in\left\{n_{\min }, n_{\min }+1, \ldots, n_{\max }\right\}$ for arbitrary $n_{\min }$ and $n_{\max }$, we have to find the largest basis element $B_{N}$ such that $B_{N}-1 \leq n_{\min }$, traverse all the words $\left\langle B_{N}-1\right\rangle_{B} \preceq w \preceq\left\langle n_{\max }\right\rangle_{B}$ and then discard the values of $R(n)$ for all $n$ in the interval $\left\{B_{N}-1, B_{N}, \ldots, n_{\text {min }}-1\right\}$.

However, we will still usually set $n_{\min }=B_{k}-1, n_{\max }=B_{k+1}-1$, because this precisely delimits all representations of length $k+1$. Calculating $R(n)$ on such intervals allows us to uncover the palindromic structure of $R(n)$, as well as trends in the number of its maxima and the sequence of numbers that have a unique representation.
$R(n)$ on representations of length 5


Figure 3.1: $R(n)$ in the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 5 .

### 3.2 Computational Results

In this section we will present computational results of our survey of $R(n)$ in various confluent systems. We will begin by presenting results for the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system as a model example. In this system, $R(n)$ was calculated for all representations with lengths up to 23 (i.e. up to $B_{23}-1 \approx$ $\left.7,68 \cdot 10^{8}\right)$. In Figures $3.1,3.2,3.3,3.4$ see the graph of $R(n)$ for all $n$ whose representations have lengths $5-8$. We can see that $R(n)$ is symmetric on the interval $B_{l-1}-1$ to $B_{l}-1$. This precisely delimits representations of length $l$ (plus the element $B_{l-1}-1$ ), the representation $\langle n\rangle_{B}=1^{l}$ being the center of symmetry. We will later prove that the $R(n)$ function displays such a palindromic structure in all $B$-systems with the ( F ) property. We will also show this palindrome is precisely aligned with this interval (i.e. the numbers $B_{k}-1 \leq n \leq B_{k+1}-1$ ) in all confluent systems of order 2 with coefficients $a, 1$, where $a$ is some natural number.

For further study of the maxima of $R(n)$, we will establish some notation. The value of $R(n)$ depends on the length of representation, thus it suffices to restrict our analysis of $R(n)$ to representations of a given length. Denote

$$
\psi(l):=\max _{\left|\langle n\rangle_{B}\right|=l} R(n)=\max \left\{R(n) \mid B_{l-1}-1<n \leq B_{l}-1\right\}
$$

and

$$
\Psi(l):=\left\{\arg \max _{\left|\langle n\rangle_{B}\right|=l} R(n)\right\}
$$

Note: We count $0_{B}$, the representation of zero, among the representation of length 1 .
In Table 3.1, the maxima of $R(n)$ with respect to the length of the representation are displayed, along with the first 4 members of the set $\Psi(l)$. We notice that the value of $\psi(l)$ satisfies the following relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(l)=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{2}\right\rceil-1} \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

## $R(n)$ on representations of length 6



Figure 3.2: $R(n)$ in the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 6 .
$R(n)$ on representations of length 7


Figure 3.3: $R(n)$ in the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | $\# \Psi(l)$ | First 4 elements of $\Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 2 | 1 | 4 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 20 |
| 3 | 2 | 4 | 100 | 101 | 200 | 201 |
| 4 | 2 | 16 | 1000 | 1001 | 1002 | 1010 |
| 5 | 4 | 4 | 10100 | 10101 | 20100 | 20101 |
| 6 | 4 | 32 | 100100 | 100101 | 100200 | 100201 |
| 7 | 8 | 4 | 1010100 | 1010101 | 2010100 | 2010101 |
| 8 | 8 | 48 | 10010100 | 10010101 | 10020100 | 10020101 |
| 9 | 16 | 4 | 101(01) ${ }^{2} 00$ | $101(01)^{2} 01$ | 201(01) ${ }^{2} 00$ | $201(01)^{2} 01$ |
| 10 | 16 | 64 | 1001(01) ${ }^{2} 00$ | 1001(01) ${ }^{2} 01$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{2} 00$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{2} 01$ |
| 11 | 32 | 4 | 101(01) ${ }^{3} 00$ | 101(01) ${ }^{3} 01$ | 201(01) ${ }^{3} 00$ | $201(01)^{3} 01$ |
| 12 | 32 | 80 | $1001(01)^{3} 00$ | $1001(01)^{3} 01$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{3} 00$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{3} 01$ |
| 13 | 64 | 4 | 101(01) ${ }^{4} 00$ | 101(01) ${ }^{4} 01$ | $201(01)^{4} 00$ | $201(01)^{4} 01$ |
| 14 | 64 | 96 | $1001(01)^{4} 00$ | $1001(01)^{4} 01$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{4} 00$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{4} 01$ |
| 15 | 128 | 4 | 101(01) ${ }^{5} 00$ | 101(01) ${ }^{5} 01$ | 201(01) ${ }^{5} 00$ | $201(01)^{5} 01$ |
| 16 | 128 | 112 | $1001(01)^{5} 00$ | $1001(01)^{5} 01$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{5} 00$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{5} 01$ |
| 17 | 256 | 4 | $101(01)^{6} 00$ | $101(01)^{6} 01$ | $201(01)^{6} 00$ | $201(01)^{6} 01$ |
| 18 | 256 | 128 | $1001(01)^{6} 00$ | $1001(01)^{6} 01$ | $1002(01)^{6} 00$ | $1002(01)^{6} 01$ |
| 19 | 512 | 4 | $101(01)^{7} 00$ | $101(01)^{7} 01$ | $201(01)^{7} 00$ | $201(01)^{7} 01$ |
| 20 | 512 | 144 | $1001(01)^{7} 00$ | $1001(01)^{7} 01$ | $1002(01)^{7} 00$ | $1002(01)^{7} 01$ |
| 21 | 1024 | 4 | 101(01) ${ }^{8} 00$ | 101(01) ${ }^{8} 01$ | 201(01) ${ }^{8} 00$ | $201(01)^{8} 01$ |
| 22 | 1024 | 160 | $1001(01)^{8} 00$ | $1001(01)^{8} 01$ | 1002(01) ${ }^{8} 00$ | $1002(01)^{8} 01$ |
| 23 | 2048 | 4 | $101(01)^{9} 00$ | $101(01)^{9} 01$ | $201(01)^{9} 00$ | $201(01)^{9} 01$ |

Table 3.1: Maxima of $R(n)$ in relation to the length of representation in the $(2,1)$-system.
$R(n)$ on representations of length 8


Figure 3.4: $R(n)$ in the $(2,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 8 .
and that for the size of the set $\Psi(l)$ the following holds - for every $l \geq 3$ :

$$
\# \Psi(l)= \begin{cases}4 & \text { for } l \text { odd } \\ 16\left(\frac{l}{2}-1\right) & \text { for } l \text { even }\end{cases}
$$

We will later prove these two claims using the formula for $R(n)$ that will be introduced in Chapter 4

For other confluent $B$-systems, closed-form expressions for $\psi(l)$ and $\# \Psi(l)$ can be found as well, which we will show in the following tables. Our survey of confluent systems revealed that confluent numeration systems can be divided into three groups according to the behaviour of $R(n)$. These groups are distinguished by whether the last coefficient is equal or strictly less than the other coefficients and the order of recurrence. More precisely, the confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ show very similar behaviour to the Fibonacci system, those with and $a=b$ and order $m>2$ behave analogically to the $m$-bonacci systems, whilst confluent systems with $a>b$ can be grouped together as they all satisfy 3.10 . We will verify these statements in Chapter 4

### 3.2.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$

Confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ show analogous behaviour to the Fibonacci system. See Table 3.2 where we present the values of $\psi(l)$ and $\# \Psi(l)$ as well as the first four elements of $\Psi(l)$ for the $(2,2)$-system. In Figures 3.7 and 3.8 see the graph of $R(n)$ for the systems with coefficients $(2,2)$ and $(3,3)$ on all $n$ whose representation has length 7 . Lastly, in Table 3.3 we have the sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems of this type.

Notice that for the value of $\psi(l)$ the following holds:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \psi(2 l+1)=F_{l} \quad \text { for } l \geq 0 \\
& \psi(2 l+2)=2 F_{l-1} \text { for } l \geq 1
\end{aligned}
$$

Furthermore, except for the initial cases $l=1,2,3,4$ and $l=6,9,12$ we can see from Table 3.3 that the sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ satisfy

$$
\begin{aligned}
\# \Psi(2 k+1) & =2 \cdot a \quad \text { for } k \geq 1, k \neq 4 \\
\# \Psi(2 k) & =4 \cdot a^{2} \quad \text { for } k \geq 4, k \neq 6
\end{aligned}
$$

For lengths $l=1$ and $l=2$ the set $\Psi(l)$ is simply composed of all numbers with greedy representations over the alphabet $A=\{0,1, \ldots, a\}$ (where we count 0 among the representations of length 1 ), of which there are $\# \Psi(1)=a+1$ and $\# \Psi(2)=(a+1) \cdot a-1$. For example for the $(3,3)$-system we have $\Psi(2)=\{10,11,12,13,20,21,22,23,30,31,32\}$.

For $l=3$ the set $\Psi(l)$ consists solely of numbers whose greedy representation has the form $x 00$, because then we can perform one interchange $x 00 \leftrightarrow(x-1) a a$. Hence $\# \Psi(3)=a$ because the most significant digit $x$ can be any nonzero digit from $A$.

The situation for $l=4$ is similar, $\Psi(l)$ will consist of numbers with greedy representations $x 00 y$ and $x y 00$. In the first case, $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and $y \in A$, so we obtain $a \cdot(a+1)$ possible representations. In the latter case, $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ again but the situation for $y$ is more complicated. The digit $y$ cannot be zero, since $y=0$ has been counted as part of the first string $x 00 y$. Then, if $x=a$, then $y$ can only be from the set $\{1, \ldots, a-1\}$ because the representation $x y 00$ is greedy. Thus $x y 00$ accounts for $(a-1) \cdot a+(a-1)=a^{2}-1$ representations. In total we obtain $\# \Psi(4)=a \cdot(a+1)+a^{2}-1=2 a^{2}+a-1$ possible representations.

The case $l=6$ can be solved by a similar analysis. The value $\psi(6)=4$ is reached on representations of the form $x 00 y 00$, where $x, y \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, because that allows two independent interchanges $x 00 \leftrightarrow(x-1) a a$ and $y 00 \leftrightarrow(y-1) a a$. Hence $\# \Psi(6)=a^{2}$.

The case $l=9$ is more complicated. There are three basic forms of words $w$ on which the value $R(w)=8=\psi(9)$ is reached. They are $x 00010000, x 00 y 00 z 00$, and $x 01000100$, where $x, y, z \in$ $\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. The string $x 00 y 00 z 00$ allows three independent interchanges $* 00 \leftrightarrow(*-1) a a$, this corresponds to $a^{3}$ elements of $\Psi(9)$. The words $x 01000100, x 00010000$ contribute another $2 a$ elements of $\Psi(9)$.

Lastly, all the maximal representations of length $l=12$ are precisely the words with one of the forms

$$
x 00 y 00 z 00 v 00, x 00 y 00010000, x 00 y 01000100, x 01000100 y 00, \text { and } x 00010000 y 00
$$

where again $x, y, z, v \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, thus we obtain $\# \Psi(12)=a^{4}+4 \cdot a^{2}$.
We will revisit the cases $\Psi(9)$ and $\Psi(12)$ in Chapter 4 when we have proven the matrix formula for $R(n)$ and proven the expression for the value of $\psi(l)$.
$R(n)$ in (2,2)-System on representations of length 7


Figure 3.5: $R(n)$ in the $(2,2)$ - $B$-system for all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .
$R(n)$ in $(3,3)$-System on representations of length 7


Figure 3.6: $R(n)$ in the $(3,3)$ - $B$-system for all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | $\# \Psi(l)$ | First four elements of $\Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 2 | 1 | 6 | 2 | 10 | 11 | 12 |
| 3 | 2 | 2 | 100 | 200 |  |  |
| 4 | 2 | 9 | 1000 | 1001 | 1002 | 1100 |
| 5 | 3 | 4 | 10000 | 10100 | 20000 | 20100 |
| 6 | 4 | 4 | 100100 | 100200 | 200100 | 200200 |
| 7 | 5 | 4 | 1000100 | 1010000 | 2000100 | 2010000 |
| 8 | 6 | 16 | 10000100 | 10000200 | 10010000 | 10010100 |
| 9 | 8 | 12 | 100010000 | 100100100 | 100100200 | 100200100 |
| 10 | 10 | 16 | 1000100100 | 1000100200 | 1001000100 | 1001010000 |
| 11 | 13 | 4 | 10001000100 | 10100010000 | 20001000100 | 20100010000 |
| 12 | 16 | 32 | 100010000100 | 100010000200 | 100100010000 | 100100100100 |
| 13 | 21 | 4 | 1000100010000 | 1010001000100 | 2000100010000 | 2010001000100 |
| 14 | 26 | 16 | 10001000100100 | 10001000100200 | 10010001000100 | 10010100010000 |
| 15 | 34 | 4 | 100010001000100 | 101000100010000 | 200010001000100 | 201000100010000 |
| 16 | 42 | 16 | 1000100010000100 | 1000100010000200 | 1001000100010000 | 1001010001000100 |
| 17 | 55 | 4 | 10001000100010000 | 10100010001000100 | 20001000100010000 | 20100010001000100 |
| 18 | 68 | 16 | 100010001000100000 | 100010001000100000 | 100100010001000000 | 100101000100010000 |
| 19 | 89 | 4 | 1000100010001000000 | 1010001000100010000 | 2000100010001000000 | 2010001000100010000 |
| 20 | 110 | 16 | 10001000100010000000 | 10001000100010000000 | 10010001000100000000 | 10010100010001000000 |
| 21 | 144 | 4 | 100010001000100000000 | 101000100010001000000 | 200010001000100000000 | 201000100010001000000 |
| 22 | 178 | 16 | 1000100010001000000000 | 1000100010001000000000 | 1001000100010000000000 | 1001010001000100000000 |

Table 3.2: Maxima of $R(n)$ in relation to the length of representation in the $(2,2)$-system.

| $\# \Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | 1,1 | 2,2 | 3,3 | 4,4 | 5,5 | 6,6 | 7,7 |
| 1 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 |
| 2 | 1 | 1 | 5 | 11 | 19 | 29 | 41 | 55 |
| 3 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| 4 | 2 | 2 | 9 | 20 | 35 | 54 | 77 | 104 |
| 5 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 | 12 | 14 |
| 6 | 4 | 1 | 4 | 9 | 16 | 25 | 36 | 49 |
| 7 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 | 12 | 14 |
| 8 | 6 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 | 100 | 144 | 196 |
| 9 | 8 | 3 | 12 | 33 | 72 | 135 | 228 | 357 |
| 10 | 10 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 | 100 | 144 | 196 |
| 11 | 13 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 | 12 | 14 |
| 12 | 16 | 5 | 32 | 117 | 320 | 725 | 1440 | 2597 |
| 13 | 21 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 | 12 |  |
| 14 | 26 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 |  |  |  |
| 15 | 34 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |  |  |  |
| 16 | 42 | 4 | 16 | 36 |  |  |  |  |
| 17 | 55 | 2 | 4 | 6 |  |  |  |  |
| 18 | 68 | 4 | 16 | 36 |  |  |  |  |
| 19 | 89 | 2 | 4 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 20 | 110 | 4 | 16 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 21 | 144 | 2 | 4 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 22 | 178 | 4 | 16 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 23 | 233 | 2 | 4 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 24 | 288 | 4 | 16 |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 10 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |

Table 3.3: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m=2$.

### 3.2.2 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m>2$

Confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m>2$ show analogous behaviour to the $m$-bonacci systems. See Table 3.4, where we display the values of $\psi(l)$ and the first four elements of the set $\Psi(l)$ for the $(2,2,2)$-system. In Figures 3.7 and 3.8 , see $R(n)$ on representations of length 7 in $B$-systems with coefficients $(2,2,2)$ and $(3,3,3)$. Lastly, we present the values of $\psi(l)$ for surveyed $B$-systems of order $m=3$ and $m=4$ in Tables 3.5, 3.6.
$R(n)$ in (2,2,2)-System on representations of length 7


Figure 3.7: $R(n)$ in the $(2,2,2)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

The expression for $\psi(l)$ is more difficult to uncover than in the previous case $a=b$ and $m=2$. However, as we will show in Chapter 4.4, the values of $\psi(l)$ in relation to $l=p(m+1)+q$ satisfy

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\psi(p(m+1)+q) & =2^{p} & \text { for } q \in\{0,1, \ldots, m-2\}, \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m-1) & =2^{p}+2^{p-2} & & \text { if } p \geq 2 \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m) & =2^{p}+2^{p-1} . & &
\end{array}
$$

## $R(n)$ in (3,3,3)-System on representations of length 7



Figure 3.8: $R(n)$ in the (3,3,3)-B-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .


Figure 3.9: $R(n)$ in the (4,4,4)-B-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | $\# \Psi(l)$ | First four elements of $\Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 2 | 1 | 6 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 20 |
| 3 | 1 | 17 | 100 | 101 | 102 | 110 |
| 4 | 2 | 2 | 1000 | 2000 |  |  |
| 5 | 2 | 10 | 10000 | 10001 | 10002 | 11000 |
| 6 | 2 | 41 | 100000 | 100001 | 100002 | 100010 |
| 7 | 3 | 4 | 1000000 | 1001000 | 2000000 | 2001000 |
| 8 | 4 | 4 | 10001000 | 10002000 | 20001000 | 20002000 |
| 9 | 4 | 32 | 100001000 | 100002000 | 100010000 | 100010001 |
| 10 | 5 | 4 | 1000001000 | 1001000000 | 2000001000 | 2001000000 |
| 11 | 6 | 16 | 10000001000 | 10000002000 | 10001000000 | 10001001000 |
| 12 | 8 | 8 | 100010001000 | 100010002000 | 100020001000 | 100020002000 |
| 13 | 8 | 92 | 1000001000000 | 1000010001000 | 1000010002000 | 1000020001000 |
| 14 | 10 | 16 | 10000010001000 | 10000010002000 | 10001000001000 | 10001001000000 |
| 15 | 12 | 48 | 100000010001000 | 100000010002000 | 100000020001000 | 100000020002000 |
| 16 | 16 | 16 | 1000100010001000 | 1000100010002000 | 1000100020001000 | 1000100020002000 |
| 17 | 16 | 240 | 10000010000001000 | 10000010000002000 | 10000100010001000 | 10000100010002000 |
| 18 | 20 | 48 | 100000100010001000 | 100000100010002000 | 100000100020001000 | 100000100020002000 |
| 19 | 24 | 128 | 1000000100010000000 | 1000000100010000000 | 1000000100020000000 | 1000000100020000000 |
| 20 | 32 | 32 | 10001000100010000000 | 10001000100010000000 | 10001000100020000000 | 10001000100020000000 |

Table 3.4: Maxima of $R(n)$ in relation to the length of representation in the (2, 2, 2)-system.

| $\# \Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | 1, 1,1 | 2, 2,2 | 3, 3,3 | 4, 4, 4 | 5, 5, 5 |
| 1 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| 2 | 1 | 2 | 6 | 12 | 20 | 30 |
| 3 | 1 | 3 | 17 | 47 | 99 | 179 |
| 4 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 |
| 5 | 2 | 3 | 10 | 21 | 36 | 55 |
| 6 | 2 | 7 | 41 | 119 | 259 | 479 |
| 7 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 |
| 8 | 4 | 1 | 4 | 9 | 16 | 25 |
| 9 | 4 | 5 | 32 | 99 | 224 | 425 |
| 10 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 | 10 |
| 11 | 6 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 | 100 |
| 12 | 8 | 1 | 8 | 27 | 64 | 125 |
| 13 | 8 | 9 | 92 | 411 | 1224 | 2885 |
| 14 | 10 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 |  |
| 15 | 12 | 6 | 48 | 162 | 384 |  |
| 16 | 16 | 1 | 16 | 81 |  |  |
| 17 | 16 | 13 | 240 | 1575 |  |  |
| 18 | 20 | 6 | 48 | 162 |  |  |
| 19 | 24 | 8 | 128 |  |  |  |
| 20 | 32 | 1 | 32 |  |  |  |
| 21 | 32 | 17 | 592 |  |  |  |
| 22 | 40 | 8 | 128 |  |  |  |

Table 3.5: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m=3$

|  |  | $\# \Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | 1, 1, 1, 1 | $2,2,2,2$ | $3,3,3,3$ | 4, 4, 4, 4 |
| 1 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 |
| 2 | 1 | 2 | 6 | 12 | 20 |
| 3 | 1 | 4 | 18 | 48 | 100 |
| 4 | 1 | 7 | 53 | 191 | 499 |
| 5 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 |
| 6 | 2 | 3 | 10 | 21 | 36 |
| 7 | 2 | 8 | 42 | 120 | 260 |
| 8 | 2 | 19 | 161 | 623 | 1699 |
| 9 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| 10 | 4 | 1 | 4 | 9 | 16 |
| 11 | 4 | 5 | 32 | 99 | 224 |
| 12 | 4 | 18 | 180 | 756 | 2160 |
| 13 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| 14 | 6 | 4 | 16 | 36 | 64 |
| 15 | 8 | 1 | 8 | 27 | 64 |
| 16 | 8 | 7 | 88 | 405 |  |
| 17 | 8 | 34 | 628 | 3894 |  |
| 18 | 10 | 4 | 16 |  |  |
| 19 | 12 | 6 | 48 |  |  |
| 20 | 16 | 1 | 16 |  |  |
| 21 | 16 | 9 |  |  |  |
| 22 | 16 | 54 |  |  |  |

Table 3.6: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m=4$

### 3.2.3 Confluent Systems with $a>b$

Confluent systems with $a>b$ differ from the $m$-bonacci systems. Besides the ( 2,1 )-system that served as our introductory example, we also looked at further systems of this kind. The values of $\psi(l)$ and $\# \Psi(l)$ can be seen in Table 3.7 for systems of order $m=2$ and in Table 3.8 for systems of order $m=3$ and in Table 3.9 for systems with $m=4$. As in the case of the systems with coefficients $a=b$, the maximal value of $R(n)$ is independent of the recurrence coefficients and depends solely on the order of recurrence and length of representation. In Chapter 4 we will prove that for all confluent systems with $a>b$ it is in fact equal to

$$
\psi(l)=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}
$$

Furthermore, the maxima are always concentrated in $a$ clusters, as could be seen in the (2,1)system and in Figures 3.10, 3.11, and 3.13, where we show $R(n)$ in the systems with coefficients $(3,1),(3,2)$ and $(2,2,1)$ on all representations of length 7 . Notice that only in the $(3,1)$-system the graph is symmetric as in the $(2,1)$-systems.

Looking at Tables $3.7 \& 3.8$ further, we may uncover a pattern in the size of the set $\Psi(l)$. Whenever $l \equiv 1 \bmod m$, the size of the set $\Psi(l)$ is equal to

$$
\# \Psi(l)=a \cdot(a-b)^{\left\lfloor\frac{l}{m}\right\rfloor-1}(a-b+1) .
$$

This is due to the fact that in all confluent systems with $a>b$ the representations on which the value $\psi(p m+1)$ is reached are of the form

$$
w=w_{l-1} \underbrace{\left(0^{m-1} c_{p}\right) \cdots\left(0^{m-1} c_{1}\right)}_{p \text { times }} 0^{m-1} w_{0},
$$

where $p=\left\lfloor\frac{l}{m}\right\rfloor-1, w_{l-1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, w_{0} \in\{0,1, \ldots, a-b\}$ and $c_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$ for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, p\}$.

| \# ${ }^{(l)}$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | 2,1 | 3,1 | 3,2 | 4,1 | 4,2 | 4,3 | 5,1 | 5,2 | 5,3 | 5,4 | 6,1 | 6,2 | 6,3 | 6,4 |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 4 | 5 | 5 | 5 | 6 | 6 | 6 | 6 | 7 | 7 | 7 | 7 |
| 2 | 1 | 4 | 9 | 10 | 16 | 17 | 18 | 25 | 26 | 27 | 28 | 36 | 37 | 38 | 39 |
| 3 | 2 | 4 | 9 | 6 | 16 | 12 | 8 | 25 | 20 | 15 | 10 | 36 | 30 | 24 | 18 |
| 4 | 2 | 16 | 54 | 38 | 128 | 99 | 68 | 250 | 204 | 156 | 106 | 432 | 365 | 296 | 225 |
| 5 | 4 | 4 | 18 | 6 | 48 | 24 | 8 | 100 | 60 | 30 | 10 | 180 | 120 | 72 | 36 |
| 6 | 4 | 32 | 189 | 74 | 640 | 342 | 132 | 1625 | 1012 | 537 | 206 | 3456 | 2360 | 1464 | 774 |
| 7 | 8 | 4 | 36 | 6 | 144 | 48 | 8 | 400 | 180 | 60 | 10 | 900 | 480 | 216 | 72 |
| 8 | 8 | 48 | 540 | 110 | 2688 | 972 | 196 | 9000 | 4236 | 1524 | 306 | 23760 | 13040 | 6120 | 2196 |
| 9 | 16 | 4 | 72 | 6 | 432 | 96 | 8 | 1600 | 540 | 120 | 10 | 4500 | 1920 | 648 | 144 |
| 10 | 16 | 64 | 1404 | 146 | 10368 | 2520 | 260 | 46000 | 16308 | 3948 | 406 |  |  |  |  |
| 11 | 32 | 4 | 144 | 6 | 1296 | 192 | 8 | 6400 | 1620 | 240 | 10 |  |  |  |  |
| 12 | 32 | 80 | 3456 | 182 | 38016 | 6192 | 324 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 13 | 64 | 4 | 288 | 6 | 3888 | 384 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 14 | 64 | 96 | 8208 | 218 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 15 | 128 | 4 | 576 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 16 | 128 | 112 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 17 | 256 | 4 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 18 | 256 | 128 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |

Table 3.7: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with order $m=2$ and coefficients satisfying $a>b$.
$R(n)$ in $(3,1)$-System on representations of length 7


Figure 3.10: $R(n)$ in the (3,1)- $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .


Figure 3.11: $R(n)$ in the (3,2)-B-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

|  |  | $\# \Psi(l)$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | $2,2,1$ | $3,3,1$ | $3,3,2$ | $4,4,1$ | 4, 4, 2 | 4, 4, 3 |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 4 | 5 | 5 | 5 |
| 2 | 1 | 6 | 12 | 12 | 20 | 20 | 20 |
| 3 | 1 | 16 | 45 | 46 | 96 | 97 | 98 |
| 4 | 2 | 4 | 9 | 6 | 16 | 12 | 8 |
| 5 | 2 | 20 | 63 | 42 | 144 | 108 | 72 |
| 6 | 2 | 80 | 351 | 236 | 1024 | 771 | 516 |
| 7 | 4 | 4 | 18 | 6 | 48 | 24 | 8 |
| 8 | 4 | 36 | 207 | 78 | 688 | 360 | 136 |
| 9 | 4 | 208 | 1593 | 632 | 6656 | 3558 | 1412 |
| 10 | 8 | 4 | 36 | 6 | 144 | 48 | 8 |
| 11 | 8 | 52 | 576 | 114 | 2832 | 1008 | 200 |
| 12 | 8 | 400 | 5697 | 1244 | 34816 | 12876 | 2820 |
| 13 | 16 | 4 | 72 | 6 | 432 | 96 | 8 |
| 14 | 16 | 68 | 1476 | 150 |  |  |  |
| 15 | 16 | 656 | 17874 | 2072 |  |  |  |
| 16 | 32 | 4 | 144 | 6 |  |  |  |
| 17 | 32 | 84 | 3600 | 186 |  |  |  |
| 18 | 32 | 976 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 19 | 64 | 4 |  |  |  |  |  |
| 20 | 64 | 100 |  |  |  |  |  |

Table 3.8: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with $a>b$ and order $m=3$.

|  |  |  | $\# \Psi(l)$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l$ | $\psi(l)$ | $2,2,2,1$ | $3,3,3,1$ | $3,3,3,2$ |
| 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 4 |
| 2 | 1 | 6 | 12 | 12 |
| 3 | 1 | 18 | 48 | 48 |
| 4 | 1 | 52 | 189 | 190 |
| 5 | 2 | 4 | 9 | 6 |
| 6 | 2 | 20 | 63 | 42 |
| 7 | 2 | 84 | 360 | 240 |
| 8 | 2 | 320 | 1863 | 1244 |
| 9 | 4 | 4 | 18 | 6 |
| 10 | 4 | 36 | 207 | 78 |
| 11 | 4 | 212 | 1611 | 636 |
| 12 | 4 | 1040 | 10530 | 4268 |
| 13 | 8 | 4 | 36 | 6 |
| 14 | 8 | 52 | 576 | 114 |
| 15 | 8 | 404 | 5733 | 1248 |
| 16 | 8 | 2464 | 45603 | 10532 |
| 17 | 16 | 4 | 72 | 6 |
| 18 | 16 | 68 |  |  |
| 19 | 16 | 660 |  |  |
| 20 | 16 | 4848 |  |  |
| 21 | 32 | 4 |  |  |
| 22 | 32 | 84 |  |  |
| 23 | 32 | 980 |  |  |

Table 3.9: Sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all surveyed systems with $a>b$ and order $m=4$.


Figure 3.12: $R(n)$ in the $(4,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .


Figure 3.13: $R(n)$ in the $(2,2,1)$ - $B$-system on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length 7 .

## Chapter 4

## Properties of $R(n)$ in Confluent $B$-systems

### 4.1 Palindromic Structure of $R(n)$

As noted before, $R(n)$ displays a piecewise palindromic structure. It is not difficult to realise that this is true in all systems with the ( F ) property. Take an $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ with greedy representation $\langle n\rangle_{B}=x=x_{l} x_{l-1} \cdots x_{1} x_{0}$. The word $x^{C}=\left(a-x_{l}\right)\left(a-x_{l-1}\right) \cdots\left(a-x_{1}\right)\left(a-x_{0}\right)$, where $a=t_{1}$ is the largest digit of the canonical alphabet, is called the complement of $x$. The word $x^{C}$ is a representation of some value $\pi\left(x^{C}\right)=\tilde{n}$. The value of $R(n)$ depends solely on the number of possible interchanges generated by the rule $0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m} \rightarrow 10^{m}$, which form the rewriting system consisting of the rules

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m} & \rightarrow 10^{m} \\
\vdots & \\
0 t_{1} t_{1} \cdots t_{1} t_{1} & \rightarrow 10\left(t_{1}-t_{2}\right) \cdots\left(t_{1}-t_{m-1}\right)\left(t_{1}-t_{m}\right) \\
1 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots t_{m-1} t_{m} & \rightarrow 20^{m} \\
\vdots & \\
\left(t_{1}-1\right) t_{1} t_{1} \cdots t_{1} t_{1} & \rightarrow t_{1} 0\left(t_{1}-t_{2}\right) \cdots\left(t_{1}-t_{m-1}\right)\left(t_{1}-t_{m}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

along with all the interchanges generated from the initial representations of zero (i.e. the rules $0 t_{1} t_{2} \cdots\left(t_{m-1}+1\right) \rightarrow 10^{m-1}, \ldots, 0\left(t_{1}+1\right) \rightarrow 10$ that can be used at the end of a $B$ representation). Clearly, the complement of every rewritable factor is rewritable, however, not necessarily by the same rule. Take for example the ( $3,2,2$ )-system. Then the associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ is generated by the rule $0322 \rightarrow 1000$ and consists of a total of 12 rules, written below:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
0322 \rightarrow 1000, & 1322 \rightarrow 2000, & 2322 \rightarrow 3000, \\
0323 \rightarrow 1001, & 1323 \rightarrow 2001, & 2323 \rightarrow 3001, \\
0332 \rightarrow 1010, & 1332 \rightarrow 2010, & 2332 \rightarrow 3010, \\
0333 \rightarrow 1011, & 1333 \rightarrow 2011, & 2333 \rightarrow 3011 .
\end{array}
$$

Notice that the complement of every string on the right hand side of a rule appears on the left hand side of a rule and vice versa. For example, the complement of the right side string 3010
is 0323 , which appears on the left side of the rule $0323 \rightarrow 1001$. It is easy to prove that this in fact holds in general. Take an arbitrary rewritable string $u=u_{m} u_{m-1} u_{m-2} \cdots u_{1} u_{0}$ that is on the left side of a rule. Then $u_{m}<t_{1}$ and clearly $u_{m-i} \geq t_{i}$ for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$. Then we get $u^{C}=\left(t_{1}-u_{m}\right) 0\left(t_{1}-u_{m-2}\right) \cdots\left(t_{1}-u_{1}\right)\left(t_{1}-u_{0}\right)$ and $u^{C}$ is a rewritable string on the right side of a rule, since $u_{m}^{C}<t_{1}$ and $u_{m-i}^{C} \leq t_{1}-t_{i}$ for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$. The same statement can be proved for rewriting rules using the initial representations of zero. However, only if those initial representations of zero have digits contained in the canonical alphabet $A$. Omitting those rewriting rules that have digits not contained in $A$ is not a problem, since we are only interested in complements of greedy representations.

Let us now return to the number $\tilde{n}$ represented by the string $x^{C}$. Clearly if a factor of $x$ was rewritable, then the factor of its complement will be also rewritable. Therefore $R(n)=R(\tilde{n})$. Since

$$
n+\tilde{n}=a \cdot \sum_{i=0}^{l} B_{i}
$$

the centre of symmetry will correspond to the value which we denote

$$
C(l+1)=\frac{a}{2} \cdot \sum_{i=0}^{l} B_{i},
$$

where we use $l+1$ as the argument because that is the length of the word $x$. Thus, the sequence $(R(n))_{n=0}^{\infty}$ contains a palindrome ending in the value $R\left(B_{l+1}-1\right)$ and beginning in the value $a \cdot \sum_{i=0}^{l} B_{i}-B_{l+1}+1$. As we noted before in Chapter 3, in ( $a, 1$ )-systems the palindrome spans precisely the numbers whose representation has length $l+1$ (plus the largest number whose representation has length $l$, which is $B_{l}-1$ ). This is a consequence of the fact that in ( $a, 1$ )-systems, the greedy representation of $B_{l}-1$ has the form

$$
\left\langle B_{l}-1\right\rangle_{B}= \begin{cases}(a 0)^{\frac{l}{2}} & \text { for } l \text { even } \\ (a 0)^{\left\lfloor\frac{l}{2}\right\rfloor} a & \text { for } l \text { odd }\end{cases}
$$

The complement of $\left\langle B_{l}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ is thus the word $\left\langle B_{l-1}-1\right\rangle_{B}$. In all other systems, the complement of $\left\langle B_{l}-1\right\rangle_{B}$ is a word with value strictly smaller than $B_{l-1}-1$, thus the palindrome does not align with representations of a given length. We can say that the palindrome with centre $C(l+1)$ overlaps with the palindromes with centres $C(l)$ and $C(l+2)$, and possibly others in certain systems.

### 4.2 Matrix Formula for $R(n)$

In this section we will formalise our findings from the previous chapter and derive a closedform formula for the function $R(n)$. Throughout this section, we will use the word gap to refer to factors consisting of consecutive zeroes.

Analogically to the approach used in [11, we will derive a matrix formula for the function $R(n)$. The formula for $R(n)$ in the Fibonacci system is originally due to Berstel [1]. Kocábová, Masáková and Pelantová [11] then derived a matrix formula for $R(n)$ in the $m$-bonacci numeration systems. We will generalise their results to all confluent $B$-systems. During the time of writing, we did not know that Edson [2] derived the formula as well, as part of her study of confluent systems of order two (i.e. the ( $a, b$ )-systems, where $a \geq b \geq 1$ ).

Firstly, we will explore in detail the proof the matrix formula for $R(n)$ for the $B$-system with basis $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-1}$, then generalise our findings to all confluent systems.

In the second half of this chapter, we will use the matrix formula to verify our observations about the properties of the function $R(n)$ from Chapter 3 . We will begin by a trivial observation.

Lemma 4.1. Suppose some representation of the form $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $x_{1}$ is non-zero, i.e. $x_{1} \in$ $\{1,2\}$ and $r_{1} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Then

$$
R\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=1+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor .
$$

Proof. The representation $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is certainly greedy. Using the rewriting rules $100 \rightarrow 021,200 \rightarrow$ 121 we can generate new (non-greedy) representations

$$
x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} \rightarrow\left(x_{1}-1\right) 210^{r_{1}-2} \rightarrow\left(x_{1}-1\right) 20210^{r_{1}-4} \rightarrow \cdots
$$

until the end of the string is reached - i.e. until we cannot apply a rewriting rule any further:

$$
\cdots \rightarrow \begin{cases}\left(x_{1}-1\right) 2020 \cdots 20210 & \text { if } r_{1} \text { is odd } \\ \left(x_{1}-1\right) 2020 \cdots 2021 & \text { if } r_{1} \text { is even }\end{cases}
$$

Evidently, the string $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ can be rewritten only $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor$ times in total, since there are $r_{1}$ zeroes available to be rewritten and each rewriting replaces two zeroes in the suffix $0^{r_{1}}$. We can therefore write

$$
R\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=1+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor,
$$

where we count the original representation $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ plus the $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor$ representations generated by subsequent rewritings of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$.

Similarly to the terminology established in [11], we will distinguish long and short representations. This will be a key concept for deriving the matrix formula of $R(n)$.

Definition 4.2. Let $w=x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u$ be some greedy representation, where $x_{1}$ is non-zero, $r_{1} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and the suffix $u$ is either empty or has a non-zero initial digit. Then a long representation of $w$ (with respect to $x_{1}$ ) is any $B$-representation $v$ such that

- $\pi(v)=\pi(w)$,
- $v \in A^{*}$, where $A$ is the canonical alphabet of the $B$-system,
- $w$ and $v$ share the prefix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$.

Conversely, a short representation of $w$ (with respect to $x_{1}$ ) is any $B$-representation $u$ such that

- $\pi(u)=\pi(w)$,
- $u \in A^{*}$, where $A$ is the canonical alphabet of the $B$-system,
- $u=\left(x_{1}-1\right) u_{N-2} u_{N-3} \cdots$. I.e. the digit $x_{1}$ was rewritten to $x_{1}-1$ using some rewriting rule generated by the $B$-system.

The number of long and short representations will be denoted $\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)$ and $\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)$, respectively.

Note: The naming is based on the $m$-bonacci $B$-systems, where indeed, every short representation of $w$ is shorter than a long representation of $w$. For example, among the two Fibonacci representations $w=100$ and $v=011$ of the number three, $v$ is shorter than $w$ (where the length is understood as to be counted to the first non-zero digit). However, in other $B$-systems, such as the ( 2,1 )-system, this need not be the case, since $w=200$ is a long representation, while $u=121$ is called a short representation of the same value, even if it has the same length.

A trivial observation is that every greedy representation is a long representation. Recall the representations from Example 3.2:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
1020100, & 1002200, & 0212200, \\
1020021, & 1002121, & 0212121 .
\end{array}
$$

Then representations in the left and centre columns are long representations of $w=1020100$ with respect to the initial 1 , whereas those in the right column are short representations. We can therefore write $\bar{R}(1020100)=4$ and $\underline{R}(1020100)=2$.

From the above definition and example it is apparent that $R\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)=\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)+\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)$ for every greedy representation $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u$. In matrix form:

$$
R\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} u\right)} .
$$

Let us now consider a more complex example. Suppose that we have a greedy representation with two non-zero digits, one that can be written as $w=x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $x_{1}, x_{2} \in\{1,2\}$, $r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Then the following holds - if $x_{2}=2$, then $r_{2} \geq 1$. This condition is equivalent to the normality (greediness) of the representation. We will now assess short and long representations separately before synthesizing our findings into the matrix formula for $R(w)$.

Lemma 4.3. Let $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $x_{1}, x_{2} \in\{1,2\}, r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, be a greedy representation in the $B$-system satisfying the recurrence $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-2}$, where $x_{1}, x_{2} \in\{1,2\}, r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Then the number of long representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal to

$$
\bar{R}\left(x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)} .
$$

Proof. The number of long representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal to the total number of representations of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ because the only allowed rewritings can be done on the suffix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, the prefix $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ must be kept unchanged. Then, the total number of representations that can be generated by rewriting the suffix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal precisely to $R\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)+\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)$.

Lemma 4.4. Let $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $x_{1}, x_{2} \in\{1,2\}, r_{1}, r_{2} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, be a greedy representation in the $B$-system satisfying the recurrence $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-2}$. Then the number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal to

$$
\underline{R}\left(x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\right. & \left.\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)}
\end{array} \quad \text { if } x_{1}=1, ~ \begin{array}{ll}
\left(\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)} & \text { if } x_{1}=2 . \tag{4.1}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Proof. Suppose initially that $r_{2}=0$. Then evidently $x_{2}=1$, otherwise $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ would not be greedy. The number of short representations of $1 x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal to zero, since even after rewriting $x_{1}$ we are left with

$$
1 x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} \rightarrow 1\left(x_{1}-1\right) 210^{r_{1}-2},
$$

where the prefix $1\left(x_{1}-1\right) 2$ cannot be rewritten further, so $1 x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ has no short representations. Accordingly, both expressions on the right-hand side of (4.1) are equal to zero when $r_{2}=0$.

Consider now the case when $r_{2} \geq 1$. Additionally, let $r_{2}$ be an even integer. Then apparently we can rewrite the prefix $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ precisely $r_{2} / 2$ times, until we arrive at the string

$$
x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} \rightarrow \cdots \rightarrow\left(x_{2}-1\right) \underbrace{20 \cdots 2021}_{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}},
$$

where the prefix $\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 2021$ cannot be rewritten further. All of these rewritings have no effect on the suffix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, so the number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal simply to $\frac{r_{2}}{2}$ multiplied by the total number of representations of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$. Furthermore, since $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor=\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor=\frac{r_{2}}{2}$ for even $r_{2}$, the formula (4.1) holds regardless of the value of the digit $x_{1}$.

Lastly, take an odd $r_{2} \geq 1$. Then suppose the prefix $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ was already rewritten $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor$ times, yielding the string

$$
\left(x_{2}-1\right) \underbrace{20 \cdots 20210}_{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} .
$$

Now, if $x_{1}=1$, we can rewrite the string once more using the rule $101 \rightarrow 022$ (whose usage is highlighted in bold), which yields the representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 2021010^{r_{1}} \rightarrow\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 202 \mathbf{0 2 2} 0^{r_{1}} . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Alternatively, $x_{1}$ could have been rewritten earlier to 0 , which would then using the rule $100 \rightarrow$ 021 yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 202021210^{r_{1}-2} . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again, in both cases, all rewritings of the prefix $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ can be done independently of whether the suffix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ was rewritten. Therefore, the total number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is equal to $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$ times the number of long representations of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ (string (4.2〕) plus $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$ times the number of short representations of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ (string $\left.\sqrt[4.3)\right]{ }$ plus its $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}-2}{2}\right\rfloor$ subsequent rewritings). Formally

$$
\underline{R}\left(x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\left(\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)+\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)\right),
$$

which is precisely the first row of equation 4.1).
Consider now the case when $x_{1}=2$. Then after $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor$ rewritings of the prefix $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ the following string is reached:

$$
\left(x_{2}-1\right) \underbrace{20 \cdots 20210}_{r_{2}} 20^{r_{1}} .
$$

The factor 102 (bold) cannot be rewritten further, so the number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ that are reachable without rewriting the suffix $20^{r_{1}}$ is equal to $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor \bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)$. However, if the digit $x_{1}=2$ is rewritten using the $200 \rightarrow 121$ rule (which is possible only if $r_{1} \geq 2$ ), the factor 102 is replaced by 101 , which we can rewrite:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\cdots & \rightarrow\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 202102000^{r_{1}-2} \rightarrow \\
& \rightarrow\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 202101210^{r_{1}-2} \rightarrow \\
& \rightarrow\left(x_{2}-1\right) 20 \cdots 202022210^{r_{1}-2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, the number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ that are obtained if we also rewrite the suffix $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ at least once (making it a short representation of $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ ) is equal to $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor \underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)$.

The total number of short representations of $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is therefore equal to

$$
\underline{R}\left(x_{2} 0^{r_{2}} x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}}{2}\right\rfloor \bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{2}+1}{2}\right\rfloor \underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right),
$$

which is precisely the second row of equation 4.1.
In Lemmas 4.3 and 4.4 we saw that the contribution of the factor $x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ to the value of $R(w)$ depends on $r_{2}$ (the length of the gap) and the digit $x_{1}$. This is a key difference to the $m$-bonacci systems, where we have to only consider the digits 0 and 1 . The different contribution of 1 and 2 can be expressed in the form of two matrices:

Definition 4.5. Consider the $B$-system with basis $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-1}$. Then for all $r \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ the redundancy matrices are defined as

$$
M_{1}(r)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{\lfloor+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right), \quad M_{2}(r)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) .
$$

With this definition, we can then synthesise the findings from Lemmas 4.1, 4.3, and 4.4 into the following theorem.

Theorem 4.6. Consider the $B$-system with basis $B_{n}=2 B_{n-1}+B_{n-1}$. Then every greedy representation can be written in the form

$$
w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}
$$

where $x_{i} \in\{1,2\}, r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ for all $i$, and the following holds: If $x_{i}=2$ for some index $i>1$, then $r_{i} \geq 1$. Consider some greedy representation $w$ thus written. Then $R(w)$ has the closed form

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \tag{4.4}
\end{array}\right) M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right) \cdots M_{x_{1}}\left(r_{2}\right)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor} .
$$

Proof. By induction on $s \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$. Case $s=1$ is treated in Remark 4.1, case $s=2$ is an immediate corollary of Lemmas 4.3 and 4.4.

Suppose now that $s>2$ and that the formula (4.4) holds for some $s$. To prove that it holds for $s+1$, recall the proofs of Lemmas 4.3 and 4.4 We never evaluated $\bar{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)$ and $\underline{R}\left(x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)$, so the factor $x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ can be replaced by any $x_{s} u$, where $x_{s} \in\{1,2\}, u \in A^{*}$ and $x_{s} u$ is a greedy representation. Setting $x_{s} u=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ and using Lemmas 4.3, 4.4 yields

$$
R\left(x_{s+1} 0^{r_{s+1}} x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right) M_{x_{s}}\left(r_{s+1}\right) M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right) \cdots M_{x_{1}}\left(r_{2}\right)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor},
$$

which proves the theorem.
The above theorem proven for the $(2,1)$-system can be generalised to all confluent $B$-systems. However, another, third case of a digit ending the factor of consecutive zeroes has to be proven first. We will first introduce some notation.

Definition 4.7. Consider a confluent $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Then for all $r \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ the three redundancy matrices are defined as

$$
M_{c}(r)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right), \quad M_{a-b+1}(r)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right), \quad M_{d}(r)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right),
$$

for all digits $1 \leq c<a-b+1$ and $a-b+1<d \leq a$.
Evidently, not all three matrices are defined for all possible pairs of coefficients $a, b$. For example, in the case when $a=b$, only the matrices $M_{a-b+1}(r), M_{d}(r), d \in\{2, \ldots a\}$ are defined, since there is no digit $c$ in the canonical alphabet that would satisfy $1 \leq c<a-b+1$. On the other hand, all three matrices are defined for example in the (3,2)-system. Note that $M_{a-b+1}(r)$ is the same matrix as in the matrix formula for the $m$-bonacci systems [11. We will prove three propositions establishing the origin of these matrices, from which the matrix formula for $R(n)$ will follow.

Proposition 4.8. Suppose a confluent $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Consider a greedy representation of the form $w=x 0^{r} c u$, where $x \in\{1, \ldots, a\}, r \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, $c$ is a digit satisfying $1 \leq c<a-b+1$, and $u$ is either the empty word or a word such that $c u$ is a greedy representation. Then

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(x 0^{r} c u\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r} c u\right)}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}(c u)}{\underline{R}(c u)} .
$$

Proof. A generalisation of Lemmas 4.3 and 4.4 The number of long representations $\bar{R}\left(x 0^{r} c u\right)$ is clearly equal to the total number of representations of $c u$, hence $\bar{R}\left(x 0^{r} c u\right)=\bar{R}(c u)+\underline{R}(c u)$.

Let us now determine the number of short representations. Suppose $p, q$ such that $r=p m+q$ and $q \in\{0,1, \ldots m-1\}$. Clearly the gap $0^{r}$ may be rewritten $p=\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor$ times, after rewriting we are left with the string

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x-1) a^{m-1}(b-1) \cdots a^{m-1} b 0^{q} c u \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $q=m-1$, then since $1 \leq c<a-b+1$ we can rewrite (4.5) once more, which yields the string

$$
(x-1) a^{m-1}(b-1) \cdots a^{m-1}(b-1) a^{m-1}(b+c) u
$$

If $q<m-1$, this rewriting is not possible, so we obtain

$$
\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r} c u\right)=\left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor(\bar{R}(c u)+\underline{R}(c u)),
$$

which proves the second row of the matrix.
Proposition 4.9. Consider $a$ confluent $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Consider a greedy representation of the form $w=x 0^{r}(a-b+1) u$, where $x \in\{1, \ldots, a\}, r \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, and $u$ is either the empty word or a word such that $(a-b+1) u$ is a greedy representation. Then

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(x 0^{r}(a-b+1) u\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r}(a-b+1) u\right)}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}((a-b+1) u)}{\underline{R}((a-b+1) u)} .
$$

Proof. Suppose $p, q$ such that $r=p m+q$ and $q \in\{0,1, \ldots m-1\}$. Again, the gap $0^{r}$ may be rewritten $p=\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor$ times, after which we are left with the string

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x-1) a^{m-1}(b-1) \cdots a^{m-1}(b-1) 0^{q}(a-b+1) u . \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $q=m-1$. Then we can rewrite (4.6) once more only if we rewrite the digit ( $a-b+1$ ) first. This yields the string

$$
(x-1) a^{m-1}(b-1) \cdots a^{m-1}(b-1) a^{m-1} a \widetilde{u},
$$

where $\widetilde{u}$ is the suffix of the result of the rewriting $(a-b+1) u \rightarrow(a-b) \widetilde{u}$. This corresponds to $\left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor \underline{R}((a-b+1) u)$ representations. If we do not rewrite the digit $(a-b+1)$, we do not gain this extra rewriting, thus we count another $\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor \bar{R}((a-b+1) u)$ possible representations. If $q<m-1$, this rewriting is not possible, so in total we obtain

$$
\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r}(a-b+1) u\right)=\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor \bar{R}((a-b+1) u)+\left\lfloor\frac{r+1}{m}\right\rfloor \underline{R}((a-b+1) u),
$$

which proves the claim.
Proposition 4.10. Suppose a confluent $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Consider a greedy representation of the form $w=x 0^{r} d u$, where $x \in\{1, \ldots, a\}, r \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, the digit $d$ satisfies $d>a-b+1$, and $u$ is either the empty word or a word such that du is a greedy representation. Then

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(x 0^{r} d u\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r} d u\right)}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}(d u)}{\underline{R}(d u)} .
$$

Proof. Suppose $p, q$ such that $r=p m+q$ and $q \in\{0,1, \ldots m-1\}$. Clearly the gap $0^{r}$ may be rewritten $p=\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor$ times, after which we are left with the string

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x-1) a^{m-1}(b-1) \cdots a^{m-1} b 0^{q} d u . \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because $d>a-b+1$, no more rewritings are possible, which leads us to

$$
\underline{R}\left(x 0^{r} d u\right)=\left\lfloor\frac{r}{m}\right\rfloor(\bar{R}(d u)+\underline{R}(d u)),
$$

thus proving the claim.
Theorem 4.11. Consider a confluent $B$-system of order $m$ with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Then every greedy representation can be written in the form

$$
w=x_{n} 0^{r_{n}} x_{n-1} 0^{r_{n-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}},
$$

where $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ for all $i$, and the following holds: If $x_{i} x_{i-1} \cdots x_{i-m+1}=a^{m-1}$ for some index $i>m-1$, then either $x_{i-m}<b$ or $r_{k} \geq 1$ for some $k \in\{i, i-1, \ldots, i-m\}$.

Then $R(w)$ has the closed form

$$
R\left(x_{n} 0^{r_{n}} x_{n-1} 0^{r_{n-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \tag{4.8}
\end{array}\right) M_{x_{n-1}}\left(r_{n}\right) M_{x_{n-2}}\left(r_{n-1}\right) \cdots M_{x_{1}}\left(r_{2}\right)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{m}\right\rfloor} .
$$

Proof. Corollary of Propositions 4.8, 4.9, and 4.10.
We will now use Theorem 4.11 to verify our observations from Section 3.2 .

### 4.3 Maxima of $R(n)$ in General Confluent Systems

As said before, when discussing the maxima of $R(n)$, confluent $B$-systems' behaviour can be split into three groups based on their recurrence coefficients and order. For the first two groups consisting of systems with coefficients satisfying $a=b$, we will simply generalise findings for the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems [11, 12]. The third group with coefficients that satisfy $a>b$ displays simpler behaviour.

For all three classes of confluent systems we will use the same approach as in [11, 12]. Firstly, we shall derive a lower bound for $\psi(l)$ by finding representations $w$ of a given length on which the maximal value of $R(w)$ is reached. Secondly, we will derive an upper bound on $\psi(l)$ and prove that it is indeed equal to the value of $R(w)$ that is reached on the representations derived in the first step. We will do this by showing which factors elements of $\Psi(l)$ must avoid and prove the expression for $\psi(l)$ by induction on $l$, the length of representation.

We will need the following terminology (that is again adapted from [11, 12]) that will simplify our analysis. We shall establish a partial ordering on matrices and prove that this ordering implies an ordering on the values of $R(w)$.
Definition 4.12. Let $\mathbb{X}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}a & b \\ c & d\end{array}\right), \tilde{\mathbb{X}}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}\tilde{a} & \tilde{b} \\ \tilde{c} & \tilde{d}\end{array}\right)$ be integer matrices with non-negative elements. Then we say that $\mathbb{X}$ majores $\tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ (written as $\mathbb{X} \succ \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ ) if

$$
\begin{equation*}
a \geq \tilde{a}, \quad b \geq \tilde{b}, \quad b+d \geq \tilde{b}+\tilde{d}, \quad \text { and } a+c>\tilde{a}+\tilde{c} \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, we say that $\mathbb{X}$ weakly majores $\tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ (written as $\mathbb{X} \succsim \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ ) if

$$
\begin{equation*}
a \geq \tilde{a}, \quad b \geq \tilde{b}, \quad a+c \geq \tilde{a}+\tilde{c}, \quad \text { and } b+d>\tilde{b}+\tilde{d} \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 4.13. Let $\alpha=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1\end{array}\right) \mathbb{A} \mathbb{X} \mathbb{B}\binom{1}{0}, \tilde{\alpha}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1\end{array}\right) \mathbb{A} \tilde{\mathbb{X}} \mathbb{B}\binom{1}{0}$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{A}=\mathbb{I}_{2} \quad \text { or } \quad \mathbb{A}=M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right) M_{x_{s-2}}\left(r_{s-1}\right) \cdots M_{x_{1}}\left(r_{2}\right) \\
& \mathbb{B}=\mathbb{I}_{2} \quad \text { or } \quad \mathbb{B}=M_{y_{t-1}}\left(p_{t}\right) M_{y_{t-2}}\left(p_{t-1}\right) \cdots M_{y_{1}}\left(p_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $r_{i+1}, p_{j+1} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, x_{i}, y_{j} \in\{1, \ldots, a\}$ for all $i=1, \ldots, s-1, j=1, \ldots, t-1$, and $\mathbb{X}, \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ are non-negative integer matrices. If $\mathbb{X} \succ \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$, then $\alpha>\tilde{\alpha}$. Furthermore, if $\binom{u}{v}=\mathbb{B}\binom{1}{0}$, where $u \geq 0$ and $v \geq 1$, then if $\mathbb{X} \succsim \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$, then $\alpha>\tilde{\alpha}$.
Proof. Denote $\left(\begin{array}{ll}f & g\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1\end{array}\right) \mathbb{A}$ and $\binom{u}{v}=\mathbb{B}\binom{1}{0}$. It is easy to see that $g \geq f \geq 1, u \geq 1$ and $v \geq 0$. Let $\mathbb{X}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}a & b \\ c & d\end{array}\right), \tilde{\mathbb{X}}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}\tilde{a} & \tilde{b} \\ \tilde{c} & \tilde{d}\end{array}\right)$ satisfy (4.9). Then

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
\alpha-\tilde{\alpha} & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
f & g
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right)\binom{u}{v}-\left(\begin{array}{ll}
f & g
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\tilde{a} & \tilde{b} \\
\tilde{c} & \tilde{d}
\end{array}\right)\binom{u}{v} \\
& =((a-\tilde{a}) f+(c-\tilde{c}) g \quad(b-\tilde{b}) f+(d-\tilde{d}) g
\end{array}\right)\binom{u}{v} .
$$

Suppose now that $u \geq 0, v \geq 1$ and that $\mathbb{X}, \tilde{\mathbb{X}}$ satisfy 4.10). Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha-\tilde{\alpha} & =((a-\tilde{a}) f+(c-\tilde{c}) g, \quad(b-\tilde{b}) f+(d-\tilde{d}) g)\binom{u}{v} \\
& \geq((a-\tilde{a}+c-\tilde{c}) f, \quad(b-\tilde{b}+d-\tilde{d}) f)\binom{u}{v} \geq\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{0}{1}=1
\end{aligned}
$$

With Lemma 4.13 in hand, it is now much easier to find representations $w$ on which the maximal value of $R(w)$ is reached. We will aim to eliminate factors that are suboptimal for maximising $R(w)$, i.e. they can be replaced by factors of the same length that contribute more to $R(w)$. Again, adapting the terminology from [11, 12], we will call these the factors forbidden for maximality:

Definition 4.14. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with canonical alphabet $A=\{0,1, \ldots, a\}$. We say that the string $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} x_{0}$, where $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ for all $i \in\{1, \ldots, s\}$ and $x_{0} \in A$ is forbidden for maximality if there exists a word $y_{t} 0^{p_{t}} y_{t-1} 0^{p_{t-1}} \cdots y_{1} 0^{p_{1}} y_{0}$, where $p_{1}, p_{t} \geq 0, y_{j} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ for all $j \in\{1, \ldots, t\}$, and $y_{0} \in A$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
r_{s}+r_{s-1}+\cdots+r_{1}+s+1 & =p_{t}+p_{t-1}+\cdots+p_{1}+t+1 \\
M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right) M_{x_{s-2}}\left(r_{s-1}\right) \cdots M_{x_{0}}\left(r_{1}\right) & \prec M_{y_{t-1}}\left(p_{t}\right) M_{y_{t-2}}\left(p_{t-1}\right) \cdots M_{y_{0}}\left(p_{1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We will sometimes say that the word $y_{t} 0^{p_{t}} \cdots y_{1} 0^{p_{1}} y_{0}$ improves the factor $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}} x_{0}$.
We have now everything ready for determining the expressions for $\psi(l)$ in all three groups of confluent systems. We will end this section by stating an evident fact about the ordering of redundancy matrices:

Fact 4.15. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a \geq b \geq 1$. Then for all $r \geq 1$ such that $r \equiv m-1 \bmod m$ the redundancy matrices satisfy the inequality

$$
M_{c}(r) \succ M_{a-b+1}(r) \succsim M_{d}(r),
$$

for all digits $1 \leq c<a-b+1$ and $a-b+1<d \leq a$. For other values of $r$ they satisfy

$$
M_{c}(r)=M_{a-b+1}(r)=M_{d}(r) .
$$

### 4.3.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$

As shown in Section 3.2, systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ display analogous behaviour to the Fibonacci system. We will show why the values of $\psi(l)$ in such systems equal those in the Fibonacci system, which has been studied in [12]. We will follow their approach in this section.

In short, the reason why the maxima of $R(n)$ have the same value as in the Fibonacci system is due to Fact 4.15 and the fact that in confluent systems with $a=b$ only the redundancy matrices $M_{1}(r)=M_{a-b+1}(r)$ and $M_{d}(r)$ are defined (where $d \in\{2, \ldots, a\}$ ). $M_{d}(r)$ does not increase the value $R(n)$ since it is either weakly majored by or equal to $M_{1}(r)$ - if $r>1$ and $r \equiv m-1 \bmod m$ then $M_{1}(r) \succsim M_{f}(r)$, otherwise $M_{1}(r)=M_{f}(r)$.

We shall first derive a lower bound on the value of $\psi(l)$ by evaluating $R(w)$ on some chosen representations $w$. The following lemma is taken from [12] (Lemma 3.1) and adapted to our notation.

Lemma 4.16. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m=2$. Let $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and let either $y \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ or $y=\varepsilon$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& R\left(x\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k-1} 0^{4} y\right)=R\left(x 01\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k-1} 0^{2} y\right)=F_{2 k} \text { for } k \geq 1 \text {. }  \tag{4.11}\\
& R\left(x\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k} 0^{2} y\right)=R\left(x 01\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k-1} 0^{4} y\right)=F_{2 k+1} \text { for } k \geq 1 \text {. } \tag{4.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We have chosen representations of the forms 4.11) and 4.12), because $a-b+1=1$. Hence the expression for $R(n)$ from the matrix formula will include prevailingly the matrix $M_{1}(r)$. Recall the initial conditions for the Fibonacci sequence - we set $F_{0}=1, F_{1}=2$, plus we additionally define $F_{-1}=1$. Then we can prove by induction the following

$$
\left(M_{1}(3)\right)^{q}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1  \tag{4.13}\\
\left\lfloor\frac{3}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{3+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)^{q}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right)^{q}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
F_{2 q-3} & F_{2 q-2} \\
F_{2 q-2} & F_{2 q-1}
\end{array}\right) \text { for all } q \in \mathbb{N}
$$

The case $q=1$ is evident, hence suppose the equality holds for some $q>1$. Then using the induction hypothesis and the fact that $2 F_{p}+F_{p-1}=F_{p+2}$ for all $p \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ we obtain

$$
\left(M_{1}(3)\right)^{q+1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right)^{q}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 q-3} & F_{2 q-2} \\
F_{2 q-2} & F_{2 q-1}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
F_{2 q-1} & F_{2 q} \\
F_{2 q} & F_{2 q+1}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Let us now consider the contribution of the suffixes $10^{4} y$ and $10^{2} y$. Suppose first that $y \in$ $\{1,2,3, \ldots, a\}$. Then evidently

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{4} y\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{4} y\right)}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
2 & 2
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{2}=\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{4}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{4}\right)}
$$

and

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{2} y\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{2} y\right)}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1}=\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{2}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{2}\right)}
$$

thus both the cases $y \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and $y=\varepsilon$ are equivalent for determining the values of $R(w)$ for words $w$ from (4.11) and (4.12). Using (4.13), we determine

$$
\begin{aligned}
R\left(x\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k-1} 0^{4} y\right) & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-5} & F_{2 k-4} \\
F_{2 k-4} & F_{2 k-3}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{2} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-3} & F_{2 k-2}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{2}=F_{2 k}, \\
R\left(x 01\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k-1} 0^{2} y\right) & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-5} & F_{2 k-4} \\
F_{2 k-4} & F_{2 k-3}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{1} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-3} & 2 F_{2 k-2}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{1}=F_{2 k}, \\
R\left(x\left(0^{3} 1\right)^{k} 0^{2} y\right) & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-3} & F_{2 k-2} \\
F_{2 k-2} & F_{2 k-1}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{1} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-1} & F_{2 k}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{1}=F_{2 k+1}, \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
F_{2 k-2} & F_{2 k-1}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{2}=F_{2 k+1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus we can now derive lower bounds on the value of $\psi(l)$.
Corollary 4.17. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order 2. Then for all $l \geq 1$

$$
\psi(2 l+1) \geq F_{l}, \quad \text { and } \quad \psi(2 l+2) \geq 2 F_{l-1} .
$$

Proof. The bound on the maxima of $R(w)$ on representations of odd length $\psi(2 l+1) \geq F_{l}$ is evident from Lemma 4.16 if we set $y=\varepsilon$ and relate the coefficent $k$ to $l$. According to the factorisation of the representation in (4.11) we obtain

$$
2 l+1=1+4(k-1)+4=4 k+1,
$$

hence $l=2 k$. From the factorisation of representation (4.12) we obtain

$$
2 l+1=1+4 k+2=4 k+3
$$

thus we derive $l=2 k+1$. In both cases this implies $\psi(2 l+1) \geq F_{l}$ from the proof of Lemma 4.16

The bound for representations of even length is a consequence of the fact that for all $x \in$ $\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, y \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and $u \in A^{*}$ where $y u$ is a greedy representation, the following holds:

$$
R\left(x 0^{2} y u\right) \geq 2 R(y u)
$$

This is a consequence of the fact that

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right) M_{y}(2)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)=2\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Likewise, for $r_{1}>0$ also

$$
R\left(y u 0^{r_{1}} x 0^{2}\right) \geq 2 R\left(y u 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

since for all integer matrices with $a, b \geq 1$ and $c, d \geq 0$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right) M_{x}\left(r_{1}\right)\binom{1}{1} & \geq\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left.\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{1} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right) 2\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{2}\right\rfloor} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus we have derived the following lower bound on the value of $\psi(2 l+2)$ :

$$
\psi(2 l+2) \geq 2 \psi(2 l-1) \geq 2 F_{l-1} .
$$

With the lower bounds on the value of $\psi(l)$ established, we will now prove that $\psi(l)$ is in fact equal to these lower bounds. We will first establish some factors that are forbidden in maximal representations. For that purpose we have to include and slightly adapt results of Kocábová, Masáková, and Pelantová [12] about the factors present in representations on which the maxima of $R(n)$ are reached.

Proposition 4.18 (Kocábová, Masáková, Pelantová). Suppose a confluent B-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order 2. Take the greedy representation of length $l$ on which the value of $\psi(l)$ is reached, i.e.

$$
\psi(l)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

where $r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \cdots, a\}$ for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, s\}$. Then clearly

$$
l=s+r_{s}+\cdots+r_{2}+r_{1}
$$

and all the following hold for the values of $l, s, x_{s}, x_{s-1}, \ldots, x_{1}$ and $r_{s}, r_{s-1}, \ldots, r_{1}$ :

1. If $r_{i}$ is odd for some $i \in\{2, \ldots, s\}$, then $x_{i-1}=1$.
2. $s \geq 2$ or $l \leq 5$.
3. If $l \geq 6$, then $r_{1}$ is even.
4. $r_{i} \leq 5$ for all $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, s\}$.
5. Suppose that $l \geq 6$ and $r_{i}$ are odd for all $i \in\{2,3, \ldots, s\}$. Then $r_{s} \in\{1,3\}, r_{s-1}=\cdots=$ $r_{2}=3$, and $r_{1} \in\{2,4\}$.

Proof. Statement 1 is the only new claim compared to those in the Fibonacci system. Parts $2,3,4$, and 5 are originally proven in [12] (Propositions 4.1, 4.2, 4.5, and 4.6). The proofs of Statements 2 and 4 for the Fibonacci case can be applied without modification to all confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$. Furthermore, we do not include the proof of Statement 5 , because thanks to Statement 1 it would be identical to the proof in the Fibonacci system. We will include the proofs of Statement 1 as well as an adaptation of the proof of Statement 3, because that requires slightly different treatment to that in the Fibonacci system.

## Statement 1.

Suppose that an $i \in\{2, \ldots, s\}$ exists such that $r_{i}$ is odd and $x_{i-1}>1$. Then $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$ is strictly greater than $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{2}\right\rfloor$, hence the matrix $M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)$ is weakly majored by $M_{1}\left(r_{i}\right)$ :

$$
M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \precsim\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}\left(r_{i}\right) .
$$

Thus, if some $r_{i}$ is odd, the digit $x_{i-1}$ must be equal to 1 .
Statement 3.
Since $l>5$, Part 2 implies $s \geq 2$, thus it is sufficient to prove that for odd $r_{1}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)<R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose first that $r_{s}$ is even. Then $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}}{2}\right\rfloor=\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$, thus $M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right)=M_{1}\left(r_{s}\right)$ for all $x_{s-1} \in$ $\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, and we have

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right) M_{x_{s-1}}\left(r_{s}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{l}
\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Hence we can write

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1\right) R\left(x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

However, because $r_{s}+1$ is odd, then from Statement 1 the digit $x_{s-1}$ must be equal to 1 in order for the value $R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)$ to be maximal. From the matrix formula we obtain

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right.
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+2}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right.}{\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)} .
$$

To obtain (4.14), we have to show that $\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)>0$. Clearly, $\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)=$ 0 together with $r_{1}$ odd implies either
a) that there exists an index $s-1 \geq q \geq 2$ such that $x_{q-1}>1$ and $x_{s-2}=\cdots=x_{q}=1$ and $r_{s-1}=r_{s-2}=\cdots=r_{q}=1$, or
b) that $r_{s-1}=r_{s-2}=\cdots=r_{1}=1$.

In both cases there is no way to perform a sequence of rewritings by which we would create a short representation of $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}$. Let us treat case a) first. First note that

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+2}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1, & \frac{r_{s}}{2}+2
\end{array}\right)
$$

and that $\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0\end{array}\right)^{p}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0\end{array}\right)$ for all $p \in \mathbb{N}$. Suppose first that $r_{q-1} \geq 2$. Then clearly we have $\underline{R}\left(x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)>0$ and from the fact that

$$
M_{x_{q-1}}(1)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right) \precsim\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(1)
$$

we derive

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 \cdots 10 x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)= \\
& =\left(\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1, \quad \frac{r_{s}}{2}+2\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{s-q}\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1, & \frac{r_{s}}{2}+2
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)}, \\
& R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 \cdots 1010^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)= \\
& =\left(\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1, \quad \frac{r_{s}}{2}+2\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{s-q-1}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{r_{s}}{2}+1, \quad r_{s}+3
\end{array}\right)\binom{\bar{R}\left(10^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)},
\end{aligned}
$$

hence

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 \cdots 10 x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)<R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 \cdots 1010^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)
$$

which is a contradiction with the maximality of $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 \cdots 10 x_{q-1} 0^{r_{q-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}$. Suppose now that $r_{q-1}=1$. Then the prefix $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1}(10)^{s-q} x_{q-1}$ is forbidden for maximality. Consider the prefix $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1+2(s-q)} x_{q-1}$ with the same length. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{1}\left(r_{s}+1\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{s-q}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+2}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right) \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \prec\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & \left.\left.\begin{array}{cc}
r_{s}+1+2(s-q) \\
2 \\
\hline
\end{array}\right\rfloor \frac{r_{s}+1+2(s-q)}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=M_{x_{q-1}}\left(r_{s}+1+2(s-q)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The inequality $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1+2(s-q)}{2}\right\rfloor>\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$ holds because $s-q \geq 1$. We have thus derived a contradiction.

Let us now treat case b). Then, from Statement 2 it follows that $s \geq 2$, because by assumption $l \geq 6$. Similarly to the end of case a), consider the string $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1+2(s-1)}$, which has the same length as $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 x_{s-2} 0 \cdots x_{1} 0$. Again, we obtain the inequality

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{x_{q-1}}\left(r_{s}+1\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{s-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \\
&\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \prec\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & \begin{array}{c}
r_{s}+1+2(s-1) \\
2 \\
\hline
\end{array}\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1+2(s-1)}{2}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=M_{x_{q-1}}\left(r_{s}+1+2(s-1)\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and thus a contradiction with the maximality of $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10 x_{s-2} 0 \cdots x_{1} 0$. In both cases a) and b) we have shown that $\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)$ cannot be equal to zero, proving the inequality (4.14) when $r_{s}$ is even.

Suppose now that $r_{s}$ is odd. Since $M_{1}\left(r_{s}\right) \succsim M_{d}\left(r_{s}\right)$ for all $d>1$, the digit $x_{s-1}$ must equal 1. Then from the matrix formula we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} 10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\left(1+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}}{2}\right\rfloor\right) \bar{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)+\left(1+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\right) \underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \\
& R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}+1} 10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}-1}\right)=R\left(10^{r_{s}+1} 10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \\
&=\left(1+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor\right)\left(\bar{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)+\underline{R}\left(10^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

thus proving (4.14), because $\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}}{2}\right\rfloor<\left\lfloor\frac{r_{s}+1}{2}\right\rfloor$.
Using Proposition 4.18 we can now prove the formula for $\psi(l)$. The proof is almost identical to that for the Fibonacci system ([12], Theorem 4.7). We include the proof because we will utilise it for determining the arguments of the maxima of $R(n)$, i.e. in Section 4.4.1, where we will determine the greedy representations that form the set $\Psi(l)$ in all confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$.

Theorem 4.19 (Kocábová, Masáková, Pelantová). Suppose a confluent B-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m=2$. Then

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\psi(2 k+1)=F_{k} & \text { for } k \geq 0 \\
\psi(2 k+2)=2 F_{k-1} & \text { for } k \geq 1
\end{array}
$$

Proof. In the proof we shall use the following inequalities for the Fibonacci numbers, which are simple to demonstrate. Recall that $F_{0}=1, F_{1}=2$, and $F_{-1}=1$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{p} F_{q} \leq 2 F_{p+q-1} \quad \text { for } p, q \geq 0 \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the equality holds only if $p=1$ or $q=1$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 F_{p} F_{q} \leq F_{p+q+2} \quad \text { for } p, q \geq 0 \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the equality holds only if $p=q=1$.
We shall prove the statement by induction on $k$, the length of representation. From Corollary 4.17 we already know that $\psi(2 k+1) \geq F_{k}$ and $\psi(2 k+2) \geq 2 F_{k-1}$, so it suffices to show that these lower bounds are also upper bounds, i.e. we shall prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(2 k+1) \leq F_{k} \quad \text { and } \quad \psi(2 k+2) \leq 2 F_{k-1} . \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The initial values of $\psi(k)$ are clearly $\psi(1)=1$ and $\psi(2)=1$, since no interchange $x 00 \leftrightarrow(x-1) a a$, where $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and $a$ is the greatest digit of the canonical alphabet, is possible on these lengths. Continuing further, $\psi(3)=2$, since into a greedy representation of length 3 we can fit precisely one rewriteable factor $x 00$. We conclude $\psi(4)=2$ by the same argument.

Furthermore, notice that for $r_{i}$ even we have $M_{x}\left(r_{i}\right)=M_{x}\left(r_{i}\right)\binom{1}{0}\left(\begin{array}{ll}11\end{array}\right)$ and $M_{x}\left(r_{i}\right)\binom{1}{0}=$ $\left(\left\lfloor\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \left.\frac{r_{i}}{2}\right\rfloor\end{array}\right)\right.$ for all $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. This means that for $r_{i}$ even we can say

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i} 0^{r_{i}} x_{i-1} 0^{r_{i}-1} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i} 0^{r_{i}}\right) R\left(x_{i-1} 0^{r_{i-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) .
$$

We are now ready to prove 4.17).

1. Let us first show that $\psi(2 k+2) \leq 2 F_{k-1}$.

Let $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, be a greedy representation such that $R(w)=\psi(2 k+2)$, where $k \geq 2$. Statement 3 of Proposition 4.18 implies that $r_{1}$ is even. Because $r_{s}+r_{s-1}+\cdots+r_{1}+s=2 k+2$, there must exist an $s \geq i>1$ such that $r_{i}$ is even. Let $i$ be the minimal index with this property. The number $r_{i-1}+\cdots+r_{1}+(s-i)$ is odd, e.g. $2 p+1$. Then $r_{s}+\cdots+r_{i}+i=2 k+2-(2 p+1)$. Using the inequality (4.15) and the induction hypothesis we then obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi(2 k+2) & =R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i} 0^{r_{i}}\right) R\left(x_{i-1} 0^{r_{i-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \\
& \leq \psi(2 k-2 p+1) \psi(2 p+1)=F_{k-p} F_{p} \leq 2 F_{k-1} . \tag{4.18}
\end{align*}
$$

2. Let us now prove that $\psi(2 k+1) \leq F_{k}$.

Let $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}, x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, be a greedy representation such that $R(w)=\psi(2 k+1)$, where $k \geq 2$. Statement 3 of Proposition 4.18 implies that $r_{1}$ is even. Suppose that there exists an index $s \geq i>1$ such that $r_{i}$ is even. Let $i$ be the minimal index with this property. Again, denote $r_{i-1}+\cdots+r_{1}+(s-i)=2 p+1$. Then $r_{s}+\cdots+r_{i}+i=2 k+1-(2 p+1)=2 k-2 p$. Using the inequality (4.15) and the induction hypothesis we then obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi(2 k+2) & =R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i} 0^{r_{i}}\right) R\left(x_{i-1} 0^{r_{i-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \\
& \leq \psi(2 k-2 p) \psi(2 p+1)=\psi(2(k-p-1)+2) \psi(2 p+1) \\
& =2 F_{k-p-2} F_{p} \leq 2 F_{k} . \tag{4.19}
\end{align*}
$$

It remains to consider the case when $r_{i}$ is odd for all $i \in\{2, \ldots, s\}$. Then from Statement 1 of Proposition 4.18 clearly $x_{i-1}=1$ for all $i$ and according to Statement 5 of Proposition 4.18, the only allowed $s$-tuples $\left(r_{s}, r_{s-1}, \ldots, r_{1}\right)$ are of the form $(1,3, \ldots, 3,4)$, $(3, \ldots, 3,4),(1,3, \ldots, 3,2)$, or $(3, \ldots, 3,2)$. For a given length $l$ only two of these are possible. Namely, for $l \equiv 1 \bmod 4$ we can have either $(1,3, \ldots, 3,2)$ or $(3, \ldots, 3,4)$, because $s+3(s-2)+1+2=4 s-3$ and $s+3(s-1)+4=4 s+1$, whereas for $l \equiv 3 \bmod 4$ we can have either $(1,3, \ldots, 3,4)$ or $(3, \ldots, 3,2)$ because $s+3(s-2)+1+4=4 s+3$ and $s+3(s-1)+2=4 s-1$. The values of $R$ on representations constructed from such $s$-tuples were determined in Lemma 4.16. Thus the theorem is proved.

### 4.3.2 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m>2$

For confluent systems whose coefficients satisfy $a=b$ and whose order is greater than 2, findings about the maximal values of $R(n)$ for $m$-bonacci systems [11] largely carry over. As in the previous group $a=b$ and $m=2$, we will first determine the value of $R(w)$ on chosen greedy representations $w$, thus deriving a lower bound for $\psi(l)$ in such systems. We will then establish some strings that are forbidden for maximality. Finally, we will use these forbidden strings to find an upper bound on $\psi(l)$ and thus prove that it is equal to the values that we observed in Chapter 3.

We will first estabilish some notation which we will also utilise in Sections 4.3 .3 and 4.4
Definition 4.20. Let $A$ be some finite alphabet and let $\alpha, \beta \in A^{*}$. Then for every finite alphabet $X$ and every $p \in \mathbb{N}$ we define the wildcard concatenation symbol $\left[\alpha x_{*} \beta\right]_{X}^{p}$ which we set equal to

$$
\left[\alpha x_{*} \beta\right]_{X}^{p}:=\left(\alpha x_{p} \beta\right)\left(\alpha x_{p-1} \beta\right) \cdots\left(\alpha x_{1} \beta\right),
$$

where $x_{p}, x_{p-1}, \ldots, x_{1} \in X$. For completeness and consistency, we set $\left[\alpha x_{*} \beta\right]_{X}^{0}:=\varepsilon$.
In essence, the notation $\left[\alpha x_{*} \beta\right]_{X}^{p}$ could be read as "repeat the word $\alpha \beta$ precisely $p$ times and insert between every $\alpha$ and $\beta$ a digit from $X$ ". The wildcard concatenation symbol will allow us to be efficient when talking about repeating a given factor and inserting a different digit into each repetition. We will utilise this most when analysing the maxima of $R(w)$ in confluent systems, since for many different representations $w$ the value $R(w)$ is identical. Similarly to what we saw in the case $a=b, m=2$, in all confluent systems the value $R(w)$ depends largely on the lengths of factors of consecutive zeros and not so much on the values of non-zero digits. The wildcard concatenation symbol will allow us to talk more efficiently in general about a set of factors that include the same number of consecutive zeros but differ in the values of the nonzero digits.

With this notation, we can now determine lower bounds on $\psi(l)$. However, first, let us determine the value of $\psi(l)$ for initial values of $l$. Clearly $\psi(1)=\psi(2)=\cdots=\psi(m)=1$, since no rewritable factor $x 0^{m}$, where $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a-1\}$, fits into a word of this length. All numbers $n$ smaller than $B_{m}$ thus have a unique representation.

The next case to consider is $\psi(m+1)=\psi(m+2)=\cdots=\psi(2 m)=2$, which holds because only one rewritable factor $x 0^{m}$ fits into a representation of length $m+1 \leq l \leq 2 m$.

The next case is $l=2 m+1$. We have $\psi(2 m+1)=3$ because the maximal representations $w$ will be of the form $x 0^{m-1} 10^{m}$. After rewriting the suffix $10^{m}$ to $0 a^{m}$ we gain one more zero for the rewriting $x 0^{m} \rightarrow(x-1) a^{m}$. Together this can be written as

$$
x 0^{m-1} 10^{m} \rightarrow x 0^{m-1} 0 a^{m} \rightarrow(x-1) a^{m-1} a a^{m} .
$$

Lemma 4.21. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m>2$. Then the maxima of the function $R$ defined for this system satisfy:

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\psi(p(m+1)+q) & \geq 2^{p} & \text { for } q \in\{0,1, \ldots, m-2\}, \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m-1) & \geq 2^{p}+2^{p-2} & & \text { if } p \geq 2, \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m) & \geq 2^{p}+2^{p-1} . & &
\end{array}
$$

Proof. Denote by $A$ the canonical alphabet of the $B$-system. Then denote $C=\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. For the first case we determine the value $R(w)$ on greedy representations of the form $w \in$ $\left\{\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p}, y\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p}, y 0\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p}, \ldots, y 0^{m-2}\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p}\right\}$, where $y \in C$. Clearly, such representations have lengths $l=p(m+1), p(m+1)+1, \ldots, p(m+1)+q$. Then, because $M_{x}(m)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$ for all $x \in C$ and $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1}$, we obtain from the matrix formula

$$
\psi(p(m+1)+q) \geq R(w)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{p}\binom{1}{0}=2^{p} \quad \text { for all } q \in\{0,1, \ldots, m-2\}
$$

For $l=p(m+1)+m-1$ we evaluate $R(w)$ on the greedy representation $w=y 0^{2 m-1} 10^{m}\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p-2}$, where again $y \in C$ :

$$
\psi(p(m+1)+m-1) \geq R(w)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{p-1}\binom{1}{0}=2^{p}+2^{p-2}
$$

Lastly, for $l=p(m+1)+m$ consider the value of $R(w)$ on the greedy representation $w=$ $y 0^{m-1} 10^{m}\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{p-1}$, where again $y \in C$ :

$$
\psi(p(m+1)+m) \geq R(w)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{p}\binom{1}{0}=2^{p}+2^{p-1} .
$$

We will now show some factors forbidden for maximality and restrict the set of possible representations $w$ on which $R(w)=\psi(l)$ is reached. Again, most results carry over (with a slight modification) from the $m$-bonacci case [11], so we will prove the following claims only if there is a substantial difference.

Proposition 4.22. Suppose a B-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m>2$. Suppose $a$ greedy representation $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ of length $l$ such that it is maximal, i.e. $R(w)=\psi(l)$. Then for every $i=1,2, \ldots, s$ it holds that $r_{i} \leq 2 m$ or that $r_{i}=3 m-1$ and $x_{i-1}=1$.
Proof. Analogous to the $m$-bonacci case ([11], Claim 5.4). Suppose for some $i$ that $r_{i}>2 m$ and $r_{i} \neq 3 m-1$. Then the string $x_{i} 0^{r_{i}} x_{i-1}$ is forbidden for maximality for all $x_{i-1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. First, note that if $x_{i-1}>1$, then either $M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right) \precsim M_{1}\left(r_{i}\right)$ or $M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)=M_{1}\left(r_{i}\right)$, so it suffices to treat the case $x_{i-1}=1$ only. Consider now the string $x_{i} 0^{r_{i}-m-1} 10^{m} x_{i-1}$ that has the same length as $x_{i} 0^{r_{i}} x_{i-1}$. In order to verify

$$
\begin{aligned}
M_{1}\left(r_{i}\right) & =\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \prec\left(\begin{array}{cc}
2 & 2 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{m}\right\rfloor+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-1}{m}\right\rfloor-2 & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{m}\right\rfloor+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-1}{m}\right\rfloor-2
\end{array}\right) \\
& =\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-m-1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-m}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}\left(r_{i}-m-1\right) M_{x_{i-1}}(m) .
\end{aligned}
$$

we use the fact that

$$
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor \leq\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{m}\right\rfloor+\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-1}{m}\right\rfloor-2
$$

holds for all $r_{i}>2 m$ and $r \neq 3 m-1$.
Proposition 4.23 (Kocábová, Masáková, Pelantová). Suppose a $B$-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m>2$. Then the following factors are forbidden for maximality for all $x, y, z, v \in$ $\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ :

1. $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{3 m-1} z$,
2. $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{m-1} z$,
3. $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{m-1} v$,
4. $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{2 m-1} v$, whenever $m \geq 4$.
5. $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{3 m-1} v$.

Proof. Since $M_{1}(r) \succsim M_{x}(r)$ for all $x>1$ whenever $r \equiv m-1 \bmod m$, it suffices to consider the above factors with $y=z=v=1$. Furthermore, since the contributions of any of the factors (i.e. the matrices $M_{y}(m-1), M_{z}(3 m-1)$, etc.) do not depend on the initial digit $x$, we can consider only factors with $x=1$, fully reducing this statement to the $m$-bonacci case. Refer thus to Claims 5.5-5.9 in [11] for the full proofs that these factors are forbidden. For completeness, we will include the factors which improve upon the factors $1 .-5$.

1. $x 0^{m} y 0^{m} z 0^{2 m-3} v$ improves $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{3 m-1} z$ because

$$
M_{y}(m) M_{z}(m) M_{v}(2 m-3)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
4 & 4 \\
4 & 4
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{ll}
3 & 4 \\
2 & 3
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(m-1) M_{z}(3 m-1)
$$

2. $x 0^{2 m-1} 1$ improves $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{m-1} z$ because

$$
M_{1}(2 m-1)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 2
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 2 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(m-1) M_{1}(m-1)
$$

3. $x 0^{m} y 0^{m} z 0^{2 m-3} v$ improves $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{m-1} v$ because

$$
M_{y}(m) M_{z}(m) M_{v}(2 m-3)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
4 & 4 \\
4 & 4
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 3 \\
5 & 2
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(m-1) M_{1}(2 m-1) M_{1}(m-1)
$$

4. Let $m \geq 4$. Then $\left[x_{*} 0^{m}\right]_{C}^{3} y 0^{2 m-4} z$, where $C=\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, improves $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{2 m-1} v$, because $M_{x}(m)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$ for all $x \in C$ and thus

$$
\left(M_{y}(m)\right)^{3} M_{v}(2 m-3)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
8 & 8 \\
8 & 8
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{ll}
5 & 3 \\
8 & 5
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(m-1) M_{1}(2 m-1) M_{1}(2 m-1)
$$

for all $x \in C$.
5. $x 0^{2 m} y 0^{2 m} z 0^{2 m-3} v$ improves $x 0^{m-1} y 0^{2 m-1} z 0^{3 m-1} v$ because

$$
M_{y}(2 m) M_{z}(2 m) M_{v}(2 m-3)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
6 & 6 \\
12 & 12
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{cc}
8 & 11 \\
5 & 7
\end{array}\right)=M_{1}(m-1) M_{1}(2 m-1) M_{1}(3 m-1)
$$

With these forbidden factors ready, we can state the central theorem for the value of $\psi(l)$. The proof is identical to that in the $m$-bonacci system (see [11], Theorem 5.11), thus we will not include it in this work. The only difference is that the greedy representations $w$ that form the set $\Psi(l)$ may have the most significant digit larger than 1 . Also, because $M_{1}(r) \succsim M_{x}(r)$ for all $x>1$ only if $r \equiv m-1 \bmod m$, any factors of even length may end with a digit larger than 1. Otherwise every step of the proof of Theorem 4.24 is identical to the $m$-bonacci case.

Theorem 4.24 (Kocábová, Masáková, Pelantová). Consider a confluent B-system with coefficients $a=b$ and order $m>2$. Then for every $p \geq 1$ the maxima of the function $R$ in this system satisfy

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi(p(m+1)+q) & =2^{p} & & \text { for } q \in\{0,1, \ldots, m-2\}, \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m-1) & =2^{p}+2^{p-2} & & \text { if } p \geq 2, \\
\psi(p(m+1)+m) & =2^{p}+2^{p-1} . & &
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.3.3 Confluent Systems with $a>b$

To explain the behaviour of confluent systems with coefficients $a>b$, we can use what we found for the $(2,1)$-system as a model. Let us start by noting that in representations that have length $l$ smaller than or equal to $m$, no rewriting rule from the associated rewriting system $\rho_{A}$ can be applied, therefore $\psi(l)=1$ for all $l=1,2, \ldots, m$. For representations of length $l>m$ we will follow the approach used for the other two groups of numeration systems. Firstly, we will determine the value of $R(w)$ on some chosen $B$-representations $w$ and use these for deriving a lower bound for $\psi(l)$. Secondly, we will show that the value $\psi(l)$ is indeed equal to $R(w)$.

Lemma 4.25. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a>b$ and order $m$. Denote its canonical alphabet $A$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R\left(z\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p} 0^{m-1} x_{1}\right)=2^{p+1}, \\
& R\left(z\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p} 0^{m-1} x_{1} x_{2}\right)=2^{p+1}, \\
& \vdots \\
& R\left(z\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p} 0^{m-1} x_{1} x_{2} \cdots x_{m}\right)=2^{p+1},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $p \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and $z \in\{1,2, \ldots a\}, C=\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}, x_{1} \in\{0,1, \ldots, a-b\}$ and $x_{j} \in A$ for all $j=2,3, \ldots, m-1$.
Proof. Let us first realise that for all $q \in\{1,2, \ldots, m-1\}$ the suffix $x_{1} \cdots x_{q}$ contributes the same value to $R(w)$. Since no rewriting rule from $\rho_{A}$ can be used in $x_{1} \cdots x_{q}$, we obtain

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(c 0^{m-1} x_{1} \cdots x_{q}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(c 0^{m-1} x_{1} \cdots x_{q}\right)}=M_{x_{1}}(m-1)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1}
$$

for every $c \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. If $q \geq 1$ and $x_{1} \cdots x_{q}$ has a proper prefix consisting of zeroes, i.e. if there exists an $r<q$ such that $x_{1}=x_{2}=\cdots=x_{r}=0$ then the equality holds as well because
$M_{x_{1+r}}(m-1+r)=M_{c}(m-1)$ for all $x_{r} \in A$ and $c \leq a-b$. Lastly, in the case when $x_{1} \cdots x_{q}=0^{q}$ we obtain the equivalent result

$$
\binom{\bar{R}\left(c 0^{m-1+q}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(c 0^{m-1+q}\right)}=\binom{1}{1} .
$$

We can now evaluate $R(w)$ on the whole representation:

$$
R\left(w_{N-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p} 0^{m-1} x_{1} \cdots x_{q}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(M_{c}(m-1)\right)^{p}\binom{1}{1} .
$$

Finally, because

$$
\left(M_{c}(m-1)\right)^{p}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{p}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
2^{p-1} & 2^{p-1} \\
2^{p-1} & 2^{p-1}
\end{array}\right) \quad \text { for all } p \in \mathbb{N}
$$

this results in

$$
R\left(w_{N-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p} 0^{m-1} x_{1} \cdots x_{q}\right)=2^{p+1} .
$$

Now let us show that the values from Lemma 4.25 are in fact a lower bound on $\psi(l)$.
Corollary 4.26. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a>b$ and order $m$. Then for all $l \geq 1$

$$
\psi(l) \geq 2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}
$$

Proof. Clearly for every $l \geq 1$ there exist $p \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and $q \in\{1,2, \ldots, m-1, m\}$ such that $l=p m+q$. Denote $C=\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$. Then clearly

$$
\psi(l)=\psi(p m+q) \geq R\left(w_{N-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{p-1} 0^{m-1} x_{1} \cdots x_{q}\right)=2^{p}=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}
$$

because $\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1=\left\lceil\frac{p m+q}{m}\right\rceil-1=p$.
We will now establish some strings forbidden for maximality before proving that $\psi(l)=$ $2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}$.

Proposition 4.27. Let $r \geq 2 m-1$. Then the string $y 0^{r} x$ is forbidden for maximality for all $x, y \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$.

Proof. Take any digit $c \in\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$. Then matrix $M_{x}\left(r_{i}\right)$ is majored by or equal to $M_{c}\left(r_{i}\right)$, which is majored by $M_{c}(m-1) M_{c}\left(r_{i}-m\right)$ :

$$
\begin{gathered}
M_{c}(m-1) M_{c}\left(r_{i}-m\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-m+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}-m+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \\
=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) \succ\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right)=M_{c}\left(r_{i}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Proposition 4.28. Take the greedy representation of length $l$ on which the value of $\psi(l)$ is reached, i.e. the word $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ such that $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, s$, and

$$
\psi(l)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

Then $r_{1}<2 m$.
Proof. Suppose that $w$ is maximal (i.e. that $\psi(l)=R(w)$ ) and that $r_{1} \geq 2 m$. Let $c$ be a digit $c \in\{1, \ldots, a-b\}$. Then

$$
M_{c}(m-1)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}-m}{m}\right\rfloor}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}-m}{m}\right\rfloor}=\binom{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{m}\right\rfloor}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{m}\right\rfloor} .
$$

hence for the value of $R(w)$ we obtain

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{m-1} c 0^{r_{1}-m}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
u & v
\end{array}\right)\binom{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{m}\right\rfloor}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i}}{m}\right\rfloor}>\left(\begin{array}{ll}
u & v
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{r_{1}}{m}\right\rfloor}=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

where $u, v \in \mathbb{N}$, which is a contradiction with the maximality of $w$.
Proposition 4.29. If $r_{\alpha}, r_{\beta}<m-1$ and $r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta} \geq m-2$, then the string $z 0^{r_{\alpha}} x 0^{r_{\beta}} y$ is forbidden for maximality for all nonzero digits $z, x, y$ from the canonical alphabet $A$.

Proof. This is a consequence of the fact that $M_{x}\left(r_{\alpha}\right) M_{y}\left(r_{\beta}\right)$ is majored by the matrix $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$ :

$$
M_{x}\left(r_{\alpha}\right) M_{y}\left(r_{\beta}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{2} \prec\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

If $r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}=m-2$, then $M_{c}\left(r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}+1\right)$, where $c \in\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$ is equal to ( $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$. Thus in this case the factor $z 0^{r_{\alpha}} x 0^{r_{\beta}} y$ is improved by the factor $z 0^{r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}+1} c$. On the other hand, if $r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}>m-2$ then using the assumption $r_{\alpha}, r_{\beta}<m-1$ we derive $m-1<r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}+1<2 m-1$, hence $M_{f}\left(r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}+1\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$, where $f$ is any nonzero digit from $A$. Hence in this case the factor $z 0^{r_{\alpha}} x 0^{r_{\beta}} y$ is improved by the factor $z 0^{r_{\alpha}+r_{\beta}+1} f$.

Theorem 4.30. Consider a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a>b$ and order $m$. Then for the maxima of the function $R(w)$ defined in this $B$-system the following holds:

$$
\psi(l)=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}
$$

Proof. We prove the theorem by induction on the length $l$ of the greedy representation. First write $l=p m+q$, where $p \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and $q \in\{1,2, \ldots, m-1, m\}$. For initial values of $l$, i.e. for $l=1,2, \ldots, m$ we have since shown that $\psi(l)=1$. We have also shown in Corollary 4.26 that $2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}$ is a lower bound on the value of $\psi(l)$, so it suffices to show that it is also an upper bound.

Take the greedy representation of length $l$ on which the value of $\psi(l)$ is reached, i.e. the word $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ such that $s \in \mathbb{N}$ and $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, s$, and

$$
\psi(l)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)
$$

Suppose first that $\underline{R}(w)=0$. Then clearly

$$
\psi(l)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=R\left(x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \leq \psi\left(l-r_{s}-1\right)
$$

and the statement follows from the induction hypothesis. Consider now the case $\underline{R}(w) \geq 1$. Then either $r_{s}=m-1$ and $x_{s-1} \leq a-b$ or $r_{s} \geq m$, otherwise we would not be able to rewrite the prefix $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1}$ to obtain a short representation of $w$ with respect to the digit $x_{s}$. Let us show that the coefficients $r_{i}$ and digits $x_{i}$ can only take certain values. Suppose that there is an index $2 \leq i \leq s-1$ such that $0 \leq r_{i} \leq m-2$. Then since $M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0\end{array}\right)$, we have

$$
M_{x_{i}}\left(r_{i+1}\right) M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)= \begin{cases}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}+1}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}+1}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) & \text { if } x_{i} \leq a-b \\
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) & \text { if } x_{i}=a-b+1 \\
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 1 \\
\left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}}{m}\right\rfloor & \left\lfloor\frac{r_{i+1}}{m}\right\rfloor
\end{array}\right) & \text { if } x_{i} \geq a-b+2\end{cases}
$$

In all three cases this implies

$$
\psi(l)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \leq R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i+1} 0^{r_{i+1}} x_{i} 0^{r_{i-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \leq \psi\left(l-r_{i}-1\right)
$$

and the statement follows from the induction hypothesis. Similarly, if there exists an $2 \leq i \leq s$ such that $m+1 \leq r_{i} \leq 2 m-2$, then $M_{x_{i-1}}\left(r_{i}\right)=M_{x_{i-1}}(m)$, and thus $\psi(l) \leq \psi\left(l-r_{i}+m\right)$ and again the statement follows from the induction hypothesis. Lastly, if an index $2 \leq i \leq s$ exists such that $r_{i}=m$ and $x_{i} \geq a-b+1$, then for all $1 \leq c \leq a-b$ we obtain $M_{x_{i}-1}\left(r_{i}\right)=M_{c}(m-1)$, which implies $\psi(l) \leq \psi(l-1)$ and again the statement follows from the induction hypothesis. Therefore, using Propositions 4.27, 4.28 and 4.29 it is sufficient to consider only coefficients $r_{s}=r_{s-1}=\cdots=r_{2}=m-1$ and $r_{1} \in\{0,1, \ldots, 2 m-1\}$ and digits $x_{s-1}, x_{s-2}, \ldots, x_{1} \in$ $\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$. We will now determine $R(w)$ for this combination of coefficients. Since

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right) M_{x_{s-1}}(m-1)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)=2\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

then using the induction hypothesis we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi(l) & =R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=2 R\left(x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) \\
& \leq 2 \psi(l-m) \leq 2 \cdot 2^{\left\lceil\frac{l-m}{m}\right\rceil-1}=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{m}\right\rceil-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

which proves the theorem.

### 4.4 Arguments of the Maxima of $R(n)$ in Confluent Systems

In this section we will verify our observations from Chapter 3 about the sizes of the set $\Psi(l)$ in the surveyed $B$-systems.

### 4.4.1 Confluent Systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$

In Chapter 3 we found that except for the initial cases $l=1,2,3,4$ and $l=6,9,12$, the following relationship for the size of the set $\Psi(l)$ holds:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\# \Psi(2 k+1) & =2 \cdot a & & \text { for } k \geq 1, k \neq 4 \\
\# \Psi(2 k) & =4 \cdot a^{2} & & \text { for } k \geq 4, k \neq 6 .
\end{aligned}
$$

We shall prove these relations (as well as derive the ones for $l=6,9,12$ ) by determining the greedy representations $w$ of length $l$ on which the maximal values of $\psi(l)=R(w)$ are reached. The proof of Theorem 4.19 will serve for this purpose. We will again closely follow the approach taken in [12].

Denote by $w=x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$, where $x_{i} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and $r_{i} \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ for all $i=$ $1,2, \ldots, s$, a greedy representation of length $l=s+r_{s}+r_{s-1}+\cdots+r_{1}$ such that $\psi(l)=R(w)$.

Let us first suppose that $l$ is odd and that equality is reached in 4.19). Recall that the relation 4.16 implies that for the equality to be reached, i.e. that

$$
\psi(2 k+1)=\psi(2(k-p-1)+2) \psi(2 p+1)=2 F_{k-p-2} F_{p}=F_{k},
$$

it is required that $p=1$ and $k=4$. Then $F_{k-p-2}=F_{p}=F_{1}=2$ and $F_{k}=F_{4}=8$. From 4.19) we then obtain

$$
\psi(2(k-p-1)+2)=\psi(6)=R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{i} 0^{r_{i}}\right),
$$

and

$$
\psi(2 p+1)=\psi(3)=R\left(x_{i-1} 0^{r_{i-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right) .
$$

Hence we have determined one of the forms of the maximal representations for length $l=9$. They will have $r_{3}=r_{2}=r_{1}=2$, thus they will be of the form $w=x_{3} 00 x_{2} 00 x_{1} 00$, where $x_{3}, x_{2}, x_{1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. In total, this yields $a^{3}$ representations.

Let us now suppose that $l$ is odd and that equality is not reached in 4.19. The proof of Theorem 4.19 suggests in this case that unless equality holds in 4.19), all the coefficients $r_{i}$ are odd and thus as a consequence of Proposition 4.18, they will have a very specific form, which we show below.

Corollary 4.31. Suppose a confluent $B$-system with $a=b$ and order $m=2$. Then

1. $\# \Psi(4 k+3)$ is equal to a for $k=0$ and to $2 \cdot$ a for $k \geq 1$. We have $\psi(3)=R(x 00)$, where $x \in\{1, \ldots, a\}$, thus a different possible greedy representations, and for $k \geq 1$ we have

$$
\psi(4 k+3)=R\left(x 0\left(10^{3}\right)^{k-1} 10^{4}\right)=R\left(x 0^{3}\left(10^{3}\right)^{k-1} 10^{2}\right) .
$$

Again, $x \in\{1, \ldots, a\}$, thus we obtain $a+a$ possible representations on which $\psi(4 k+3)$ is reached.
2. $\# \Psi(4 k+1)$ is equal to $a+1$ for $k=0$, since $\psi(1)$ is reached on all representations of length 1 . Then $\# \Psi(4 k+1)$ is equal to $a^{3}+2 a$ for $k=2$, since

$$
\psi(9)=R\left(x_{3} 00 x_{2} 00 x_{1} 00\right)=R\left(x_{3} 01000100\right)=R\left(x_{2} 00010000\right),
$$

where $x_{3}, x_{2}, x_{1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$. Lastly, $\# \Psi(4 k+1)=2 \cdot a$ for $k \geq 3$ or $k=1$, because then

$$
\psi(4 k+1)=R\left(x 0\left(10^{3}\right)^{k-1} 10^{2}\right)=R\left(x 0^{3}\left(10^{3}\right)^{k-1} 10^{4}\right) .
$$

The digit $x$ belongs to the set $\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, thus there are $a+a$ possible representations on which $\psi(4 k+1)$ is reached.

Consider now the case when the length $l$ is even. Take the greedy representation $w=$ $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ of length $l=2 k+2$ such that the maximum $\psi(2 k+2)$ is reached on $w$. Then the proof of Theorem 4.19 requires that equality is reached in 4.18), i.e. that

$$
\psi(2 k+2)=\psi(2 k-2 p+1) \psi(2 p+1)=F_{k-p} F_{p}=2 F_{k-1} .
$$

Relation 4.15 for the Fibonacci numbers then implies that either $k-p=1$ or that $p=1$. This further implies that the maximal representation $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ of length $2 k+2$ is split at $i=1$ or $i=s-1$, namely that either $r_{s}=2$ and $r_{s-1}, \ldots, r_{1}$ are odd, and that $x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}$ is maximal, i.e. $R\left(x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\psi(2 k-1)$, or that $r_{1}=2$ and that $x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}$ is maximal.

Corollary 4.32. Let $k \geq 3$ and let $r_{s}, \ldots, r_{1}$ satisfy $\sum_{i=1}^{s} r_{i}+s=2 k+2$. Then

$$
R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\psi(2 k+2)
$$

if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{s}=2 \quad \text { and } \quad R\left(x_{s-1} 0^{r_{s-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}\right)=\psi(2 k-1) \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{1}=2 \quad \text { and } \quad R\left(x_{s} 0^{r_{s}} \cdots x_{2} 0^{r_{2}}\right)=\psi(2 k-1) \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Corollary 4.32 we thus obtain all the possible greedy representations of even length.
Proposition 4.33. Let $k \geq 3$. Then

$$
\# \Psi(2 k+2)=4 \cdot a^{2} \quad \text { for } k \neq 5
$$

and

$$
\# \Psi(2 k+2)=a^{4}+2 a^{2} \quad \text { for } k=5
$$

Proof. Let $k \neq 5$. Then we construct elements of $\Psi(2 k+2)$ using the recipe from Corollary 4.32. Denote by $u$ an element of $\Psi(2 k-1)$ and let $x$ be a nonzero digit from the canonical alphabet. Then $\Psi(2 k+2)$ will consist of strings of the forms $x 00 u$ and $u x 00$ corresponding to (4.20 and 4.21, respectively. Both $x 00 u$ and $u x 00$ can have $2 \cdot a^{2}$ different instances, since $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$ and in Corollary 4.31 we counted that $\Psi(2 k-1)=\Psi(2 p+1)$ has $2 \cdot a$ elements for $p \neq 4$. In total we obtain $\Psi(2 k+2)=4 \cdot a^{2}$.

Suppose now that $k=5$. Then representations from the set $\Psi(2 k+2)=\Psi(12)$ will be constructed by concatenating elements of $\Psi(3)$ with those from $\Psi(9)$. Again, denote $u$ an element of $\Psi(9)$. The set $\Psi(2 k+2)$ will again consist of strings of the forms $x 00 u$ and $u x 00$. However, in this case, there are $a^{3}+2 a$ possible instances of $u$. Therefore in total we obtain $\# \Psi(12)=$ $a^{4}+2 a^{2}$.

### 4.4.2 Confluent Systems with $a>b$

In Chapter 3, we found that the number of maxima at representation of odd length is constant and equal to 4 in the $(2,1)$-system. In this section we will use the matrix formula to explain the number of arguments of the maxima of $R(n)$, or in other words, the size of the set $\Psi(l)$ for all studied confluent systems with $a>b$. We will determine $\Psi(l)$ based on the residue class of $l$ modulo $m$, where $m$ is the basis order. First let us state some general observations. An immediate corollary of Theorem 4.30 is that the maxima of $R(w)$ are reached on greedy representations

$$
w=x_{n} 0^{r_{n}} x_{n-1} 0^{r_{n-1}} \cdots x_{1} 0^{r_{1}}
$$

where as many $r_{j}$ are equal to $m-1$ as possible. Furthermore, when $r_{j}=m-1$, the digit $x_{j-1}$ is forced to be from the set $\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$. Then $M_{x_{j-1}}\left(r_{j}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)$, which majores $M_{y}\left(r_{j}\right)$ for any $y \geq a-b+1$.

We will start with the simplest case, when $l \equiv 1 \bmod m$, i.e. $l=k m+1$ for some $k \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$.

Theorem 4.34. Consider a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a>b$ and order $m$. Then the number of arguments of the maximum of $R(n)$ on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length $l=k m+1$ is equal to

$$
\# \Psi(k m+1)=a \cdot(a-b)^{k-1} \cdot(a-b+1) \quad \text { for all } k \geq 1
$$

Proof. From Theorem 4.30 we know that the value $R(w)=\psi(k m+1)$ is reached on representations $w$ of the form

$$
w=w_{k m-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{k-1} 0^{m-1} w_{0},
$$

where $w_{k m-1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, C=\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$ for all $j=1,2, \ldots, k-1$, and $w_{0} \in\{0,1, \ldots, a-$ $b\}$. We can see that truly $|w|=k m+1$ and that $w$ includes as many factors $0^{m-1}$ as possible on this length. Let us now count the number of possible instances of $w$. We have $a$ choices for $w_{k m-1}$, then $a-b$ choices for $c_{*}$ for every $j=1,2, \ldots, k-1$, and finally $a-b+1$ choices for $w_{0}$. Thus we obtain the result $\# \Psi(k m+1)=a \cdot(a-b)^{k-1} \cdot(a-b+1)$.

Let us now move on to the case $l=k m+2$. This residue class requires a much more technical proof, hence for simplicity we will start by determining the elements of the set $\Psi(k m+2)$ in the $(2,1)$-system.

Since $l$ is even, the number of repetitions of the factor 01 will be $\left\lfloor\frac{l}{2}\right\rfloor-1$ because the most significant digit $w_{l-1}$ cannot be equal to zero. Thus we can construct maximal representations of length $k m+2$ by taking the maximal representations for $k m+1$, which will have the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=w_{l-1} 0101 \cdots 01010 w_{0} \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and extend them by one more digit to length $k m+2$. We will denote this extra digit $x$. We can place $x$ to the left of every 01 factor, to the left of $0 w_{0}$ and to the right of $w_{0}$. All possible locations are shown below.

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{l-1} x 01 x 01 \cdots x 01 x 01 x 0 w_{0} x . \tag{4.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Other locations of $x$ are either equivalent or would lead to a decrease of $R(w)$, as we would break apart one of the 01 factors. Let us now evaluate $R(w)$ depending on the value of $x$ and verify that we will not change it by introducing the new digit $x$.

If $x=0$ and we place $x$ in front of a zero, then since $M_{1}(1)=M_{1}(2)$, the value of $R(w)$ does not change. Note that because $M_{1}(2)=M_{2}(2)$ this further allows us to change the digit that ends this gap to 2 , i.e. we obtain the two possible factors $x 01 \in\{001,002\}$.

Suppose the other case, i.e. that we place $x$ at the end of the representation. This yields the suffix $10 w_{0} 0$, which can either contribute to $R(w)$ as 1000 or 1010 . Both cases are equivalent, since

$$
\binom{\bar{R}(1010)}{\underline{R}(1010)}=M_{1}(1)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{1}{2}\right\rfloor}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1}=\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{3}{2}\right\rfloor}=\binom{\bar{R}(1000)}{\underline{R}(1000)} .
$$

If $x$ is a non-zero digit, then its placement anywhere except the end of the representation introduces the matrix

$$
M_{x}(0)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

into the product for $R(w)$, because that is the contribution of the factors $w_{l-1} x$ and $1 x$. In other words, we introduced a gap of zero length into the representation $w$. Since the equality

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1  \tag{4.24}\\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{p}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{q}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{r}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{s}
$$

holds for all $p+q=r+s, p, q, r, s \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, the value of $R(w)$ does not depend on the placement of $x$ and we can write
$\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)^{p}\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)^{q}=(1$

1) $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)^{p+q}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1\end{array}\right)^{p+q}$.

Placing $x$ at the end of the representation yields the suffix $10 w_{0} x$, which is realised as $100 x$ or $101 x$. Since $M_{1}(2)=M_{2}(2)$, the contribution of both suffixes to $R(w)$ is identical:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\binom{\bar{R}(100 x)}{\underline{R}(100 x)}=M_{x}(2)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{0}{2}\right\rfloor} & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1} \\
\binom{\bar{R}(101 x)}{\underline{R}(101 x)}=M_{1}(1) M_{x}(0)\binom{1}{\left\lfloor\frac{0}{2}\right\rfloor} & =\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{0}=\binom{1}{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence

$$
\binom{\bar{R}(101 x)}{\underline{R}(101 x)}=\binom{\bar{R}(100 x)}{\underline{R}(100 x)}=\binom{\bar{R}\left(10 w_{0}\right)}{\underline{R}\left(10 w_{0}\right)}=\binom{1}{1} .
$$

Using the results for the case when $l$ is odd and setting $p+q=\left\lfloor\frac{l}{2}\right\rfloor-2$ in 4.25 we obtain

$$
R(w)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{\left\lfloor\frac{l}{2}\right\rfloor-2}\binom{1}{1}=2^{\left\lceil\frac{l}{2}\right\rceil-1}
$$

which proves that the value of $R(w)$ does not change by introducing $x$.
We can now prove why

$$
\begin{equation*}
\# \Psi(l)=16\left(\frac{l}{2}-1\right) \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $l$ is even and greater than or equal to 3 . Suppose that $l=4$. Then $\psi(l)=2$, using the factorisation introduced above we observe that there are two possible placements of $x$ :

$$
w_{3} x 0 w_{0} x
$$

hence elements of $\Psi(4)$ must have one of the following forms:

1. $w=w_{3} 0 w_{0} x$, of which there are $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 3=12$ variants, since $w_{3} \in\{1,2\}, w_{0} \in\{0,1\}$ and $x \in\{0,1,2\}$.
2. $w=w_{3} x 0 w_{0}$, of which there are $1 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=4$ variants, since $w_{3}=1$ because $w$ is a greedy representation, $x \in\{1,2\}$ and $w_{0} \in\{0,1\}$, because $x=0$ is included in case 1 .

Together, we have $\# \Psi(4)=16$, which agrees with formula 4.26 and results in Table 3.1.
Let us now consider $l=6$. There are three possible placements of $x$ :

$$
w_{5} x 01 x 0 w_{0} x
$$

hence elements of $\Psi(6)$ must one of the following forms:

1. $w=w_{5} 010 w_{0} x$, of which there are again $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 3=12$ variants, since $w_{5} \in\{1,2\}, w_{0} \in\{0,1\}$ and $x \in\{0,1,2\}$.
2. $w=w_{5} 01 x 0 w_{0}$, of which there are again $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=8$ instances, because $w_{5} \in\{1,2\} x \in\{1,2\}$ and $w_{0} \in\{0,1\}, x=0$ is included in case 1 .
3. $w=w_{5} x 010 w_{0}$, amounts to 12 representations in total. If $x \in\{1,2\}$, then we gain $1 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=4$ representations, since $w_{5}=1$ (due to $w$ being a greedy representation) and $w_{0} \in\{0,1\}$. However, if $x=0$, we obtain another $2 \cdot 1 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=8$ representations, due to the fact we can exchange $w_{2}=1$ for $w_{2}=2$, because the rewriting of $w_{5} x 0=w_{5} 00 \rightarrow\left(w_{5}-1\right) 21$ is independent of the digit $w_{2}$.

In total, we obtain $\# \Psi(6)=32$ as expected.
Finally, let us treat $\Psi(8)$ separately. There are now four possible placements of $x$ :

$$
w_{7} x 01 x 01 x 0 w_{0} x,
$$

1. $w=w_{7} 01010 w_{0} x$, of which there are $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 3=12$ possible variants as in $\Psi(6)$.
2. $w=w_{7} 0101 x 0 w_{0}$, of which there are again $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=8$ possible instances as in $\Psi(6)$.
3. $w=w_{7} 01 x 010 w_{0}$ amounts to 16 representations. If $x \in\{1,2\}, w_{7} \in\{1,2\}$ and $w_{0} \in\{0,1\}$ together yield $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=8$ representations. If $x=0$, we can exchange the following 1 for a 2, i.e. we write $w$ as $w_{7} 0100 y 0 w_{0}$, where $y \in\{1,2\}$ and this yields another $2 \cdot 2 \cdot 2=8$ representations.
4. $w=w_{7} x 01010 w_{0}$ contributes 12 representations, as in $\Psi(6)$.

Together this yields $\# \Psi(8)=48$.
Now let us explore the general case $\Psi(2 k+2)$, where $k \geq 3$ : There are $k+1$ possible placements of $x$ :

$$
w_{2 k-1} x 01(x 01)^{k-2} x 0 w_{0} x,
$$

where by $(x 01)^{k-2}$ we denote the placement of $x$ in front of precisely one of the $k-3$ repetitions of the 01 factor. As shown in the previous cases,

1. $w_{2 k-1} 01(01)^{k-2} 0 w_{0} x$ contributes 12 different representations,
2. $w_{2 k-1} 01(01)^{k-2} x 0 w_{0}$ contributes 8 different representations,
3. $w_{2 k-1} 01(01)^{k-2-i} x(01)^{i} 0 w_{0}$ contributes 16 different representations for each $i \in\{1,2, \ldots, k-$ $2\}$, in total $(k-2) \cdot 16$ representations.
4. $w_{2 k-1} x 01(01)^{k-2} 0 w_{0}$ contributes 12 different representations.

In total, we obtain

$$
\# \Psi_{2,1}(2 k+2)=12+8+16(k-2)+12=16 k
$$

different representations, which corresponds with 4.26. We will now determine $\Psi(2 k+2)$ in all confluent $B$-systems with $a>b$.

Theorem 4.35. Consider a confluent $B$-system with coefficients $a>b$ and order $m$. Then the number of arguments of the maximum of $R(n)$ on all $n$ whose greedy representation has length $l=k m+2$ is for all $k \geq 1$ equal to

$$
\# \Psi(k m+2)= \begin{cases}(a-b)^{k-2}(a-b+1)\left((k-1) a^{2}+(a-b)\left((k+1) a^{2}+b-1\right)\right) & \text { if } m=2, \\ (a-b)^{k-2}(a-b+1)\left((k-1) a^{2}+(a-b)\left((k+1) a^{2}+a\right)\right) & \text { if } m>2 .\end{cases}
$$

Proof. In order to determine $\# \Psi(k m+2)$ we will follow the same approach as in the above analysis for the $(2,1)$-system. Take a greedy representation $w$ from the set $\Psi(k m+1)$. Clearly $w$ will have the form

$$
w=w_{m k-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{k-1} 0^{m-1} w_{0}
$$

where $w_{m k-1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}, C=\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$ and $w_{0} \in\{0,1, \ldots, a-b\}$. We shall now insert a new digit $x$ into $w$, denote $\tilde{w}$ this new representation of length $k m+2$. There are $k+1$ possible locations for $x$.

$$
w_{m k-1} x\left[0^{m-1} c_{*} x\right]_{C}^{k-1} 0^{m-1} w_{0} x
$$

Other locations are again equivalent or would reduce the value of $R(\tilde{w})$. We shall now determine how many representations correspond to each placement of $x$.

1. $\tilde{w}=w_{m k-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{k-1} 0^{m-1} w_{0} x$ :

In this case, there are evidently $a$ possible values for $w_{m k-1}$ and $a-b$ possible values for each $c_{*}$ in each of the $k-1$ repetitions of $0^{m-1} c_{*}$. The digit $w_{0}$ is from the set $\{0,1, \ldots, a-b\}$, thus $a-b+1$ possible values and finally, since there are no restrictions on $x$, the digit $x$ can be any digit from the alphabet $A$, thus $a+1$ possible values of $x$. In total we obtain $a \cdot(a-b)^{k-1} \cdot(a-b+1) \cdot(a+1)$ representations.
2. $\tilde{w}=w_{m k-1}\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{k-2-i} 0^{m-1} c_{i+1} x\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{i} 0^{m-1} w_{0}$ for all $0 \leq i \leq k-2$ :

We again count a possible values for $w_{m k-1}$. Then, we have to place $x$ into precisely one of the repetitions of the factor $0^{m-1} c_{*}$, thus we multiply by the coefficient $k-1$. The factor $0^{m-1} c_{i+1} x$ has $(a-b+1) \cdot a$ possible realisations, since $c_{i+1}$ can now also be zero whenever $x$ is nonzero. This follows from the fact that $M_{c_{i+1}}(m-1)=M_{x}(m)$ for all $c_{i+1} \in\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$ and $x \in\{1,2, \ldots, a\}$, thus the contribution of the factor $0^{m} x$ towards $R(\tilde{w})$ is identical to $0^{m-1} c_{i+1}$. Evidently, both $c_{i+1}$ and $x$ cannot be zero simultaneously, but even if $c_{i+1} \neq 0$, then $x$ cannot be zero. This is because we would count the same word $\tilde{w}$ twice. Compare the two placements of $x$ into two consecutive factors $0^{m-1} c_{i+1}$ and $0^{m-1} c_{i}$ :

$$
\begin{array}{lllllllll}
\text { (a) } & \cdots & 0^{m-1} & c_{i+1} & x & 0^{m-2} & 0 & c_{i} & \cdots \\
\text { (b) } & \cdots & 0^{m-1} & c_{i+1} & 0 & 0^{m-2} & c_{i} & x & \cdots
\end{array}
$$

Setting $x=0$ in case (a) yields the same string as setting $c_{i}=0$ in case (b). We have already counted the case $c_{i}=0$, thus we forbid the case $x=0$. There remain $k-2$ factors $0^{m-1} c_{i+1}$ where we have not placed $x$, and in these, again, $c_{i+1}$ can have the values $\{1,2, \ldots, a-b\}$, thus we multiply by $(a-b)^{k-2}$. Lastly, the digit $w_{0}$ can again have $a-b+1$ possible values. In total we count $a \cdot(k-1) \cdot(a-b+1) \cdot a \cdot(a-b)^{k-2} \cdot(a-b+1)=a^{2} \cdot(k-1) \cdot(a-b+1)^{2} \cdot(a-b)^{k-2}$ possible representations.
3. $\tilde{w}=w_{m k-1} x\left[0^{m-1} c_{*}\right]_{C}^{k-1} 0^{m-1} w_{0}$ :

In the third possible placement of $x$ we have to split our analysis according to the order of the basis. We again forbid $x=0$ because that is included above in case 2 . If $m>2$, then the prefix $w_{m k-1} x$ has $a^{2}$ possible values. On the other hand, if $m=2$, then the prefix $w_{m k-1} x$ has $1 \cdot(b-1)+(a-1) \cdot a$ possible realisations, because $\tilde{w}$ is a greedy representation. In other words, whenever $w_{m k-1}=a$, the digit $x$ must be smaller than $b$. Lastly, we again count $(a-b)^{k-1}$ as the contribution of the $k-1$ factors $0^{m-1} c_{*}$ and $(a-b+1)$ as all the
possible values of $w_{0}$. In total we obtain

$$
\begin{array}{r}
(b-1+(a-1) \cdot a) \cdot(a-b)^{k-1} \cdot(a-b+1) \text { if } m=2, \\
a^{2} \cdot(a-b)^{k-1} \cdot(a-b+1) \text { if } m>2 .
\end{array}
$$

possible representations.
We will now add the above cases 1., 2., and 3. together and simplify. Suppose first that $m=2$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\# \Psi(k m+2) & =a(a-b)^{k-1}(a-b+1)(a+1) \\
& +a^{2}(k-1)(a-b+1)^{2}(a-b)^{k-2} \\
& +(b-1+a(a-1))(a-b)^{k-1}(a-b+1),
\end{aligned}
$$

factoring out $(a-b)^{k-2}(a-b+1)$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\# \Psi(k m+2)=(a-b)^{k-2}(a-b+1) \cdot \Delta, \tag{4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we denote

$$
\Delta:=a(a+1)(a-b)+a^{2}(k-1)(a-b+1)+((a-1) a+b-1)(a-b) .
$$

The expression $\Delta$ can be further simplified by factoring out $(a-b)$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta & =a(a+1)(a-b)+a^{2}(k-1)(a-b+1)+((a-1) a+b-1)(a-b), \\
& =\left(a^{2}+a+a^{2}-a+b-1\right)(a-b)+a^{2}(k-1)(a-b+1), \\
& =\left(2 a^{2}+b-1\right)(a-b)+(k-1) a^{2}(a-b)+(k-1) a^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

which finally simplifies to

$$
\Delta=(k-1) a^{2}+(a-b)\left((k+1) a^{2}+b-1\right) .
$$

Returning to 4.27, we obtain the desired result

$$
\# \Psi(k m+2)=(a-b)^{k-2}(a-b+1)\left((k-1) a^{2}+(a-b)\left((k+1) a^{2}+b-1\right)\right) .
$$

The case $m>2$ is derived by the same steps.
Let us demonstrate our formula for $\# \Psi(k m+2)$ on an example. In Table (3.7) we may find the value $\# \Psi(8)=540$ for the $(3,1)$-system. Thus we have $a=3, b=1$, and $k=3$, since $8=2 \cdot 3+2$. Inputting these values yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
\# \Psi_{3,1}(8) & =(3-1)^{3-2}(3-2+1)\left((3-1) 3^{2}+(3-1)\left((3+1) 3^{2}+1-1\right)\right), \\
& =2 \cdot 3 \cdot(2 \cdot 9+2 \cdot 4 \cdot 9), \\
& =6 \cdot(18+72), \\
& =540 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Expressions could be derived for $\# \Psi(k m+3), \# \Psi(k m+4)$, etc., but they would be even more technical and complex.

## Conclusion

In this work we studied linear numeration systems and focused on their ambiguity. In Chapter 2 we introduced and verified basic properties of linear numeration systems. We then derived and implemented an algorithm for calculating $R(n)$ in a general $B$-system, which we used to calculate $R(n)$ on a chosen subclass of $B$-systems, the confluent systems. Based on our data, we conjectured that $R(n)$ in confluent systems with $a=b$ behaves very similarly to $R(n)$ defined in the Fibonacci and $m$-bonacci systems and gave an expression for the maxima of $R(n)$ in all confluent systems. Using the matrix formula derived in Chapter 4 we then verified that this is true. Furthermore we showed that the confluent systems can be split into precisely three classes. The function $R(n)$ in confluent systems with $a=b$ and order $m=2$ displayed analogous behaviour to the Fibonacci system, those with with $a=b$ and order $m>2$ behaved identically to the $m$-bonacci systems, and finally the confluent systems with $a>b$ behaved entirely differently. We have thus generalised the work of Kocábová, Masáková and Pelantová to all confluent systems.

What remains is to derive an expression for the arguments of the maxima in the confluent systems with order $a=b$ and order $m>2$. Unfortunately, in this case the results from the $m$-bonacci systems cannot be easily generalised. Furthermore, we did not study the numbers that have a unique representation in a given confluent system.

Further work could focus on trying to derive a closed-form formula for $R(n)$ (which will not be a matrix formula) in general (F) systems and on studying the properties of $R(n)$ in thsese systems, as they are a close generalisation of confluent systems.

## Appendix

In the Appendix we will describe in detail our program for calculating the function $R(n)$ in arbitrary $B$-systems. The source code may be found in the following GitHub repository:
https://github.com/hypernek/Redundance-Calculator,
while a compiled and runnable version program can be found in the same repository here: https://github.com/hypernek/Redundance-Calculator/releases/tag/v1.0.

The program runs on Windows. The source code and compiled program as well as sample data may be also found on the CD attached with the physical copy of this work.

## Usage

Two programs are included - the first calculates $R(n)$ on bounds $n_{\text {min }}$ and $n_{\text {max }}$ entered by the user and the other calculates the maxima of $R(n)$ on a range of lengths entered by the user. The output of both programs is saved as a .csv file to the directory where the program was run.

Both programs are console applications that on initialisation ask the user to enter coefficients of the basis of the $B$-system. After entering these coefficients, the basis of the $B$-system is initialised. Afterwards, each of the two programs behaves differently.

The first program (Rn_calculator.exe) asks the user to enter the lower and upper bound $n_{\min }$ and $n_{\max }$ of the values $n_{\min } \leq n \leq n_{\max }$ for which the function $R(n)$ is to be calculated. Alternatively, the user may enter an asterisk $*$ and then enter the bounds $l_{\min }$ and $l_{\max }$ of the range of lengths on which they desire $R(n)$ to be calculated. In effect, this sets $n_{\min }$ and $n_{\max }$ equal to $B_{l_{\min }-1}$ (the smalest $n$ whose representation has length $l_{\min }$ ) and $B_{l_{\max }}-1$ respectively (the largest $n$ whose representation has length $l_{\max }$ ). Hence, the user does not have to know the values of the elements of the basis sequence. After the bounds are set, the calculation commences and the console displays progress information. The values $R\left(n_{\min }\right), R\left(n_{\min }+1\right), \ldots, R\left(n_{\max }\right)$ are first stored into the computer's memory, and after they are all calculated, the program starts writing them to disc. Each row of the resultant .csv file is the triplet ( $n,\langle n\rangle_{B}, R(n)$ ) - i.e. for every $n=n_{\min }, n_{\min }+1, \ldots, n_{\max }$ the greedy representation of $n$ is stored along with the value of $R(n)$. After writing out all the calculated values of $R(n)$, the program writes the time needed for calculation and writing to disc. A sample output of the program for the ( $3,2,1$ )-system may be found in Table 4.1

The second program (Maxima_of_Rn_calculator.exe) asks the user to input the bounds $l_{\text {min }}$ and $l_{\text {max }}$ of the range of lengths $l=l_{\min }, l_{\min }+1, \ldots, l_{\max }$ for which the values $\psi(l)$ and $\# \Psi(l)$ are to be determined. Then the program asks the user to enter a number $M$, which will be the maximum number of elements of $\Psi(l)$ they desire to save for a given length $l$. As shown in Chapters 3 and 4 , the size of $\Psi(l)$ can be very large and the user does not necessarily need to save all members of $\Psi(l)$. For example, the data in Table 3.2 corresponds to entering coefficients 2, 1, lengths $l_{\text {min }}=1$ and $l_{\max }=22$ and setting $M$ equal to 4 . For every $l=l_{\min }, l_{\min }+1, \ldots, l_{\max }$

| $n$ | $\langle n\rangle_{B}$ | $R(n)$ | $n$ | $\langle n\rangle_{B}$ | $R(n)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 9355 | 10000000 | 3 | 9371 | 10000101 | 3 |
| 9356 | 10000001 | 3 | 9372 | 10000102 | 3 |
| 9357 | 10000002 | 3 | 9373 | 10000103 | 3 |
| 9358 | 10000003 | 3 | 9374 | 10000110 | 3 |
| 9359 | 10000010 | 3 | 9375 | 10000111 | 3 |
| 9360 | 10000011 | 3 | 9376 | 10000112 | 3 |
| 9361 | 10000012 | 3 | 9377 | 10000113 | 3 |
| 9362 | 10000013 | 3 | 9378 | 10000120 | 3 |
| 9363 | 10000020 | 3 | 9379 | 10000121 | 3 |
| 9364 | 10000021 | 3 | 9380 | 10000122 | 3 |
| 9365 | 10000022 | 3 | 9381 | 10000123 | 3 |
| 9366 | 10000023 | 4 | 9382 | 10000130 | 2 |
| 9367 | 10000030 | 3 | 9383 | 10000131 | 2 |
| 9368 | 10000031 | 3 | 9384 | 10000132 | 2 |
| 9369 | 10000032 | 3 | 9385 | 10000200 | 4 |
| 9370 | 10000100 | 5 | 9386 | 10000201 | 2 |

Table 4.1: Sample output data for $R(n)$ calculated in the $(3,2,1)$-system for $n=9355, \ldots, 9386$, i.e. the first 32 numbers whose greedy representation has length 8 . Note that along with the rule $1000 \leftrightarrow 0321$ we may also perform interchanges utilising the rule $100 \leftrightarrow 033$ at the end of the representation (i.e. only at the suffix $x_{2} x_{1} x_{0}$ ), which corresponds to the addition/subtraction of the initial representation of zero $\overline{1} 33$.
the program outputs $\psi(l), \# \Psi(l)$ and the first $M$ elements of $\Psi(l)$. The algorithm by which the values $\psi(l)$ and $\# \Psi(l)$ are determined is as follows.

## Algorithm for Determining the Maxima of $R(n)$ :

Initialisation: Set number_of_maximal_representations:=0.
Then for every $l=l_{\text {min }}, l_{\text {min }}+1, \ldots, l_{\text {max }}$ do:

1. Calculate $R(n)$ for every $n$ from the range $B_{l-1} \leq n \leq B_{l}-1$ and store the values into memory in the array Rn_array.
2. Find the maximal value in $R n_{-}$array and for every $n$ such that $R(n)$ is maximal (i.e. $R(n)=\psi(l))$, increment by one the counter number_of_maximal_representations and store its greedy representation $\langle n\rangle_{B}$ into the list representation_list (but only if it contains less than $M$ representations).
3. Write the triplet (max (Rn_array), number_of_maximal_representations, representation_list) into the output .csv file (I.e. write the triplet $\psi(l), \# \Psi(l), \Psi(l))$.
4. Empty Rn_array, representation_list and set number_of_maximal_representations equal to zero.

The program also creates a second file recording the time needed for calculation and memory usage for each $l$.

Lastly, in both programs, whenever the user is asked for input, they can enter a percent sign $(\%)$ to reset the basis and enter new coefficients, and then running the calculation of $R(n)$ in a different $B$-system.

## Note on Systems not Possessing the (F) Property:

When entering the basis coefficients, any sequence of integers separated by commas is a valid input, thus the program is not limited only to (F) systems. However, the correctness of the values of $R(n)$ is not guaranteed for non- $(\mathrm{F})$ systems, because we do not a priori know the size of the canonical alphabet. In the case that a non-(F) system is entered, the program sets the largest digit of the canonical alphabet to the recurrence coefficient that is maximal. For example, in the $(1,5)$-system, it would set the canonical alphabet to $\{0,1,2,3,4,5\}$, which is too large, as in this system greedy representations contain only digits $\{0,1,2,3\}$. Hence the resultant values of $R(n)$ will be incorrect. For (F) systems however, the correctness of the calculated values of $R(n)$ is always guaranteed.

## Bibliography

[1] Berstel J.. An excercise on Fibonacci representations, RAIRO Theoretical Informatics and Applications vol. 35, 2002, 491-498.
[2] Edson M., Calculating The Numbers Of Representations And The Garsia Entropy In Linear Numeration Systems. Monatshefte für Mathematik 169, 2013, 161-185.
[3] Frougny, Ch., Confluent linear numeration systems. Theoretical Computer Science, Volume 106, Issue 2, 1992, 183-219.
[4] Frougny, Ch., Solomyak, B., Finite beta-expansions. Ergodic Theory and Dynamical Systems, 12, 1992, 713-723.
[5] Frougny Ch., Sakarovitch J., Number representation and finite automata. In 'Combinatorics, Automata and Number Theory', Berthé V., Rigo M. (eds). Encyclopedia of Mathematics and its Applications 135, Cambridge University Press, 2010.
[6] Frougny, Ch., Numeration systems, In 'Algebraic Combinatorics on words', M. Lothaire. Cambridge University Press, 2002.
[7] Frougny, Ch., Representation of numbers and finite automata. Math. Systems Theory 25, 1992, 37-60.
[8] Hollander M., Greedy Numeration Systems and Regularity. Theory of Computing Systems 31, 1998, 111-133.
[9] Huet G., Confluent Reductions: Abstract Properties and Applications to Term Rewriting Systems. Journal of the ACM (JACM) 27, 1980, 797-821.
[10] Knuth, D., Bendix, P., Simple Word Problems in Universal Algebras. In: Siekmann J.H., Wrightson G. (eds) Automation of Reasoning. Symbolic Computation (Artificial Intelligence). Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg, 1983.
[11] Kocábová P., Masáková Z., Pelantová E. Ambiguity in the m-bonacci numeration system. Discrete Mathematics and Theoretical Computer Science vol. 9:2, 2007, 109-124.
[12] Kocábová P., Masáková Z., Pelantová E., Integers with a Maximal Number of Fibonacci Representations. RAIRO Theoretical Informatics and Applications vol. 39:2, 2005, 343-359.
[13] Marden, M., Geometry of Polynomials. American Mathematical Society, 1966, 122-123.
[14] Zeckendorf E., Représentation des nombres naturels par une somme de nombres de Fibonacci ou de nombres de Lucas. Bull. Soc. R. Sci. Liège 41, 1972, 179-182.

